

Chapter 501

Manny smiled sinisterly; he did plan to trick the students! They looked rich, and he had to get their money! He raised an eyebrow and said seriously, "Let me calculate it for you. You rented 60 of my motorboats, and it's 30 bucks for each round. Since each of you rode 400 rounds, on average, the total is 720,000 bucks."

What?!

Each of them rode 400 rounds?

Declan pointed at Manny as he shouted furiously, "You're an *sshole! We only rode for half an hour! How is it possible that we did 400 rounds?"

Manny flicked his cigarette casually and said, "I said that you rode 400 rounds, so you rode 400 rounds."

"F*ck you!" Declan cursed. It was apparent that Manny had twisted the truth.

"Let's stop with the bullsh*t!" Manny got impatient; he took a machete from his jacket. He held it in one hand as he urged, "Well, are you paying or not, you f*cker?"

Ordinary people would have given in when they saw

the machete.

However, the students were from wealthy families, and they were not cowards. Declan took a step forward and asked coldly, "What if I don't want to?"

"You don't want to?" That question triggered Manny, and he held the machete against Declan's neck. "I'll ask you again. Are you going to f*cking pay?"

The other students gasped. They panicked as they did not expect Manny to do that!

They could also see that Manny was a strong cultivator. If they were not mistaken, he was a Level One Master General!

"Boss." Kent Hough walked toward him arrogantly. "Don't be mad. My name is Kent, and I am from the Hough family in Donghai City; I'm sure you've heard of me. Can you put the machete down please?"

Manny chuckled. "I don't care who you are; you've had your fun, so now you should pay up."

His expression darkened. "None of you will be able to leave if you do not pay."

Whoosh!

Many strong-built men rushed toward them in an

instant! All of them were cultivators!

There were more than 70 of them, and their overflowing aura engulfed the students.

The tourists kept their distance as they could sense the tension!

The students were frightened.

It appeared that Manny was the local bully there; he had so many men!

Did they have to give in to him? The amount he requested was not large, but they did not want to be conned by him!

"I'm going to ask you one last time; do you have the money?" Manny shouted again. The machete scraped Declan's neck with a slight force. A tiny wound formed and blood oozed from it.

The students gasped again.

They panicked; they did not expect Manny to do that!

"Pay! We'll pay!" Declan shouted in panic; he was on the verge of tears.

'F*ck! I wouldn't want to risk my life for 720,000 bucks! We can't provoke them; there are more than 70 men here...'

"That's better. Transfer the money now!" Manny

was impatient.

Declan felt conflicted as he used his cellphone with shaky hands. He was about to log in to his online banking app when Yvette Lane walked to him and grabbed his cellphone. "Why should we pay them? There are so many of us here! We shouldn't be afraid of them!"

'Why are these guys such cowards?'

Yvette stomped her foot in frustration, but the male students only gave each other glances; none of them dared to walk forward.

None of them wanted to be the hero in that situation. After all, Manny and those men had machetes with them.

"You—" Yvette furrowed her brows tightly as she took another step forward. "We are not giving you any money!"

"Wow!" Manny raised an eyebrow as he stared at Yvette with interest!

'F*ck! Look at her body, is she even human? A woman with a body like this can only be a goddess.' Yvette looked exceptionally attractive, especially when she was drenched with seawater after some of their motorboat sports activities.

Manny suppressed his excitement as he laughed. "

Hey lady, are you saying that you're using my motorboats for free? It's fine if you don't want to pay. Why don't you spend a night with me?"

Yvette quivered in anger; she bit her lip so hard that it started to bleed!

Chapter 502

A few fishermen who saw the scene from a distance could no longer stay out of it. They approached the students to advise them. "Kids, just pay them. The money is a fee to ensure your safety. You can't afford to offend them; they are from the Coastline Sect! You're doomed if you don't pay them today."

The other locals nearby nodded in agreement worriedly.

The Coastline Sect was a sect located at Gold Beach since the ancient days; their influence was not to be underestimated! The members of the sect had always acted rampantly around the beach area!

The sect owned the motorboat sports business, and everyone who rented their motorboats would get swindled for a huge amount of money.

The tourists were not aware of the Coastline Sect's influence, but the local fishermen knew them well!

The sect had dominated the seafood industry due to their numbers and influence. Every fisherman was forced to give them benefits, or they would oppress them and make sure that they would not be able to fish there. The locals loathed them, but no one

dared to voice that out!

The locals also approached the students hurriedly to give them the same advice. They were worried that those kids might bring trouble to themselves if they were to offend Manny and his partners.

The Coastline Sect?

Declan and the others froze when they heard the fishermen's words; they had an uneasy feeling in their guts.

They thought that Manny and his men were only the local bullies.

They did not expect them to be from the community. That explained how he could summon so many men in an instant.

It seemed like it was not a good idea to mess with those men.

However, Yvette furrowed her eyebrows as she said, "Coastline? We are from the Hexad School. You are clearly conning us for our money; why should we pay you?"

Manny smiled sinisterly and continued to press the machete on Declan's neck.

Declan wanted to cry. He spoke in a trembling voice, "Why don't we just pay them?"

D*mn it! He did not want to act so cowardly in front of Yvette.

However, the machete was on his neck.

He might lose his head if Manny got angry. Although he cared about his image, his life was much more important! Declan was desperate as he spoke; he was almost in tears.

Yvette was displeased. "Declan, can't you act like a man? They're unreasonable! They are acting so brazenly as if there is no law in this world. I believe in justice!"

"Justice?" The men laughed.

Manny sneered. "Lady, we're the Coastline Sect; we make the rules on Gold Beach!"

Ridicule was visible on Manny's face when his eyes traced Yvette's body wildly. He continued to say, "I'm saying this again; this pretty lady can spend a night with us if you don't want to pay. It's only 720,000 bucks, and I can let it go."

He extended his hand to Yvette with a grin.

'The more I look at this pretty face, the more I like her.'

Smack!

Yvette could no longer control herself when she

noticed Manny's hand as it approached her, so she slapped him forcefully!

Manny grunted when he was thrown off for a few meters backward before he landed with a loud thud!

He coughed from the impact.

Manny's head spun from the slap. He also spat some blood after he landed on the ground.

"You disgusting pervert! You must have a death wish!" Yvette scoffed as she glared at Manny coldly as a strong aura spread from her body!

"Level Five Master General?!"

Everyone present was dumbfounded when they realized that Yvette was a Level Five Master General; she was only one step short of a Martial Marquis!

The students were extremely surprised. Yvette had been friendly and approachable during her days at the Hexad School when she was transferred there; they had never seen her unleash her full potential.

No one expected her to be that strong!

Manny coughed again.

He spat another mouthful of blood as the crowd was still in a daze. He forced himself to stand up as he pointed to Yvette. "Get her! Get the girl! I must

have her tonight! Get her!"

The strong men immediately charged toward Yvette!

Yvette's expression was icy, and she was as cool as a cucumber. A whip sword appeared with a flick of her hand and she tossed it forward!

Thump! Thump!

Yvette moved swiftly as the whip sword in her hand glided like a serpent. It took only a second for two men to retreat with horrifying screams.

Even so, Yvette was still in a perilous situation. After all, she had more than 70 opponents!

Circe Newman looked panicked, but she stomped her foot in frustration before she turned to her classmates, "What are you waiting for? Go and help Yvette! Get them!"

Chapter 503

Circe leapt and joined the battle without hesitation.

"F*ck, take them down!"

The male students finally reacted and charged forward with battle cries. The students were afraid to fight, but they had no other option. After all, they would look like a bunch of cowards if they chose to hide when the two pretty girls had already charged forward. The students had to come together when they were tangled in warfare with Manny's men!

There were around 80 students from both classes, so the numbers were pretty even.

The students had some skills after lessons from the Hexad School. The male students fought boldly with high spirits to protect their female classmates.

"Argh!"

The beach was in chaos with non-stop cries!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Both teams sustained damage. More than 20 of Manny's men had collapsed on the ground.

A few of the male students had suffered injuries

too. However, their wounds were not severe, and their lives were not in danger.

The students had an overall victory.

Yvette took her chance to get near Manny to give him two slaps and the two blows that almost rendered him unconscious. He flew a few meters backward with a bloodied mouth.

"F*ck! Retreat, retreat!" Manny yelled as he was extremely furious about their loss.

They fled to a distance before he turned to the students. "F*ck you! Don't you f*cking dare to leave! You're doomed! Just you wait!"

Declan and the students laughed.

"Keep talking!"

"Get your *sses back here if you dare!"

They were elated with their victory.

They initially thought that they should not mess with Manny and his men; they were surprised to see that they were very weak!

Yvette was all smiles, and her face lit up with excitement. "That's enough. Let's stop wasting our time with those gangsters. I'm starving; let's have a barbecue!"

They prepared a lot of food for a picnic.

The students set up a bonfire and gathered in a circle to cook their food excitedly.

They chatted as they waited for their food; it was a relaxing time for them.

Kent stretched his body and smiled with satisfaction. "That was an epic battle."

Declan nodded with a smile before he turned to Yvette. "You surprised us today, Yvette. Your heroic courage was no less than a man's! But I did okay, too; I defeated five of them!"

"Yvette, I was okay too. I knocked a few of them down!"

"So did I. I hit two of them with a rock."

The male students circled Yvette and babbled to show themselves off.

Yvette smiled politely and nodded. "I saw it; everyone was so brave. You guys are awesome."

Declan and the guys were exhilarated when Yvette praised them. Their injuries were worth it!

"By the way, Darby only watched from the side during the fight. He did not even flinch," someone said.

Swoosh.

Everyone shifted their gazes onto Darryl in an instant. Their eyes were filled with mockery and ridicule.

"He's a grown man, but he only watched from the side. How embarrassing!"

"I wouldn't have the face to stay here if I were him."

"P*ssy."

Darryl was annoyed by the students' mockery. 'D*mn it! How could I do anything? How am I supposed to fight when I have zero internal energy right now?'

Darryl only reacted with a light chuckle without the intention to explain.

Lily panicked.

All she wanted was to relax with Darryl on the trip, so she was not prepared for that.

Yvette noticed Lily's change of expression, so she stood up and said, "That's enough. Will you guys stop picking on Darryl? He doesn't have internal energy right now, so he is just like an ordinary person. He wouldn't be of much use even if he fought."

Chapter 504

The crowd shut their mouths when Yvette asked them to stop.

However, their gazes on Darryl were still filled with disdain.

"Oh, f*ck! Guys, look! Many boats are coming toward us!" someone from the crowd exclaimed.

Whoosh!

The students shifted their gazes to the sea; they saw many huge boats on their way toward the shore with high speed!

The boats were filled with people with long swords!

"What? What's happening?" Declan's eyes bulged. The ships boats had already pulled into shore within a few seconds!

Almost 800 men jumped to the shore swiftly and walked toward the students' with great vigor. It was a great scene!

Two identical-looking bald men took the lead; they were clearly twins, and they had a mighty aura!

The twins were the first and second person in

charge of the Coastline Sect.

The elder twin was called Ocean Powter, and the younger one was River Powter. Both of them were Level Three Martial Saints!

The students were shocked when they saw two Level Three Martial Saints led more than 700 men toward them. Their heartbeats accelerated, and their minds were blank!

Manny was right behind the Powter twins.

He looked like a mummy with bandages on the injuries on his head; he looked hilarious.

However, none of the students dared to laugh!

"Brother Ocean, that's them! They refused to pay after renting our motorboats, and they also injured our brothers!" Manny shouted with hatred on his face!

Ocean Powter looked around coldly before he fixed his gaze on the students and said in a neutral tone, "Speak. How should we settle this?"

His intimidating aura was spread throughout the place!

Gulp!

The students gave each other helpless glances as Ocean's domineering aura suffocated them! The

terrified ones almost pissed their pants.

"What the f*ck! Are you deaf or mute? Can't you hear what I said?" Ocean was angered when no one replied to his question. He walked to a student with a blade and kicked him swiftly!

It was a Level Three Martial Saint's kick! That student coughed blood and yelped in pain on the ground.

Ocean raised an arm and held the blade against Declan's neck before anyone else could react.

"F*cking hell! Do I have to repeat myself? How should we settle this?" Ocean did not raise his voice, but Declan had begun to hyperventilate, and he had already sweated!

He knew that he would lose his life if he gave an unsatisfactory answer!

Ocean had a murderous aura; Declan wondered how many lives he had taken before that!

"It was a misunderstanding, Boss. It was just a misunderstanding. We're sorry." Declan's voice trembled.

Who would have thought that the Coastline Sect was such a powerful sect? They had more than 700 members.

No one had the guts to offend him!

"You're sorry?" Ocean asked as he waved his arm. Hundreds of disciples from the Coastline Sect immediately besieged the students!

"Boss, we are sorry. Can't we apologize for it?" Some of the male students broke down and started to apologize non-stop; their faces were pale with fear.

"Yes, it is just a misunderstanding..."

"It's 720,000 bucks, right? We'll pay, we'll pay right now." Declan's mind was blank as he felt the cool sensation from the blade at his neck. He almost burst into tears. "Boss, we'll transfer you the money right now..."

"720,000 bucks?"

Ocean grinned wickedly. "You are the first ones who dared to provoke the Coastline Sect! You can't pay a cent less! Or we'll f*ck you up!"

Then he raised the blade to strike Declan!

Some of the students shrieked in terror.; some even shut their eyes. They were afraid to look at the horrifying scene.

"Boss!"

Every single strand of Declan's hair stood up as terror took him when he saw the blade fell. He fell

to his knees with a plop!

"Boss, I admit my mistake. Please don't kill me; it was my fault. Please have mercy, and I am willing to compensate as you wish!" Declan's voice was hoarse. Even though it was extremely embarrassing to get down on his knees in front of all his classmates, ego was nothing compared to his life!

Ocean sighed emotionlessly. "As I wish? Fine. I'll let you off if you give me 20 billion bucks. Non-negotiable."

Wait, what?

20 billion?

Chapter 505

Declan and the others were dumbfounded. They glanced at each other bitterly.

It was not a small amount even though they were from wealthy families! It was quite different when one compared 20 billion bucks' worth of assets with 20 billion bucks in cash!

Even the most influential families would only have three million bucks in cash. It would be near impossible to get 20 billion!

However, they were not in a position to refuse the offer!

"Do you have the money or not?" Ocean roared; he had lost his patience.

"Yes, yes—" Declan, who was still on his knees, repeatedly shouted as he forced a smile on his face. "Can you give us a few minutes to collect the money?"

Ocean waved his arm impatiently. "You have ten minutes. Hurry."

He retracted his blade as two of his men took two chairs to their leaders. Ocean and River took the

seats.

Declan got up frightfully and gestured to his classmates to gather around him.

"What should we do?"

The students discussed in a panic.

Even Kent was nervous as he whispered, "I've heard about the Powter brothers. They made a reputation in the martial arts community a long time ago for being powerful and ruthless. I thought that they have retired because they have been idle for the past two years. I didn't expect to see them in charge of the Coastline Sect!"

He gulped and smiled bitterly when he made his next suggestion. "I think we'll have to pay them. We can't afford to offend these people."

The students were silent.

Kent was right; they were outnumbered.

They were only weak kids.

Yvette bit her lips with a dignified expression and said firmly, "They are greedy, they marked up the amount just because they have the numbers. We can't pay them."

It was an insanely large amount of money.

Declan and Kent frowned as they advised her.

"Yvette, a wise man doesn't fight against impossible odds."

"Exactly! Those two are too strong and look at how many men they have! We'd never win."

It was clear that they were ready to surrender.

Yvette's face was flushed with unwillingness. "You are from prominent families in Donghai City! Are you going to surrender when you are bullied in your own backyard? Can you guys have more courage?"

The students fell into an awkward silence.

Kent clenched his teeth; his face was flushed with determination. "Fine, we are respected people, so we can't give in. I'm calling my dad."

It would be too embarrassing for him to keep his head in the sand after what Yvette had said.

He walked some distance away from the students and took out his cellphone to call his father, Edward Hough.

Declan, Justin, and a few others did the same thing.

Kent's call got through soon enough.

Kent started to explain. "Dad, I'm at the beach with my friends, and we got into trouble with the Coastline Sect. Ocean Powter is their head..."

"What? Coastline Sect?"

Edward immediately paled; he scolded his son on the other side of the call. "You idiot! Why did you offend the Coastline Sect? I'll have to ask someone to negotiate with them for our family's sea dealings, or our products will never be shipped out! I'm warning you, just do as they say! Don't bring your troubles home, understood?"

He hung up immediately after that.

Kent's forehead was covered with cold sweat.

'D*mn it! Is Dad inferior to the Coastline Sect? What are we going to do?'

Justin's expression soured when his dad hung up the call on him. "I told my dad what happened, and he scolded me badly. He told me not to offend them. I think we'll have to come up with the money."
"

The crowd went silent; an invisible tension was in the air.

Everyone racked their brains to get 20 billion bucks, but there was no way to do that!

Then, someone spoke calmly.

"Why don't I discuss it with them? I'll ask them to do me a solid and let us go."

It was Darryl!

'What?'

'Do him a solid and let us go?'

The students shifted their attention toward Darryl, and their gazes were filled with disdain. One the girls said, "Darryl, we're trying to find a way to come up with the money. Can you not trouble us at this moment?"

Chapter 506

"Darryl, are you nuts?" Declan was annoyed; he pointed at Darryl as he shouted, "Why would the Coastline Sect people do you that favor? Who do you think you are?"

'He must be joking.' The others scoffed at him as well.

"Honey, stop—" Lily stomped her foot in frustration as she tugged on Darryl's sleeve; her face was flushed from the embarrassment. She wanted to dig a hole and hide in it when the others mocked Darryl.

"Enough! Just ignore him." Declan waved his hand in dismissal and hushed them. "Let's get the money."
"

Darryl sighed as he took out his cellphone discreetly to send a text to Zephyr Dixon.

The Powter brothers walked toward them when their ten minutes were up; they dragged their blades on the ground. It created sparks and rattling noises.

"Do you have the money? It's only 20 billion bucks, so hurry up." Ocean was impatient.

Just 20 billion?

Declan and the others wanted to cry.

'Money doesn't grow on trees! Even those rich men on television would not be able to take out 20 billion bucks in cash even if they have a net worth of hundreds of billions!'

Net worth on television referred to all of a person's financial assets, including his company, property, cars, and shares. It would be near to impossible for one to take out 20 billion in cash!

Declan approached Ocean with a frown and tried to negotiate with him. "Boss, we really don't have that much in cash."

"What?" Ocean's expression was grim. "You took ten minutes to tell me that you don't have that much money? You're a f*cking dead man!"

He gave Declan two punches on his face!

The man broke a few Declan's teeth, and the student almost passed out from the pain.

"Boss, stop, please!" Declan winced from the pain and went down on his knees again. "Lighter, please, Boss? Please, I'm begging you..."

"F*ck off!" Ocean yelled and kicked Declan; the younger man sprawled on the ground.

"You don't have the money? I'll chop a finger off you guys, and the ladies will have to follow us home for the night!" Ocean said as he grabbed Lily's hand!

A few of the female students attracted his attention.

Those girls were beautiful, and Ocean could not think of anyone who could be compared to them. He never thought that he would meet such attractive ladies in his life. Since they could not pay, he was willing to have the ladies instead!

River also strutted toward the ladies with a grin on his face. He had his eyes on Yvette and Circe, and he scanned their bodies brazenly.

"You—" Lily exclaimed fearfully; her face was flushed with embarrassment and anger as Ocean gripped her hand tightly.

"What are you doing?!" Circe's body quivered as she shouted.

The frightened she was, the more excited the Powter brothers got. They gave the girls a big smile and said, "Don't be afraid. We're not going to hurt you; we only want to spend a night with you."

Manny and the other disciples burst into laughter!

The other students panicked, but no one voiced out as they did not dare to be the hero in that situation!

Yvette shouted for help when River dragged her away, but none of the male students helped her. She felt so disappointed and hopeless!

"Let her go."

A cold voice said!

It was Darryl!

There was total silence!

Declan and the others turn to Darryl with a conflicted expression. 'Does this idiot have a death wish?'

The other female students shook their heads. 'Is Darryl trying to act brave now? He might die if he tries to be the hero!'

Chapter 507

“What did you say?”

Ocean was stunned as he thought he had misheard Darryl. He looked at the younger man in astonishment as he dug his ears sarcastically. “Say that again?”

‘This kid has b*lls for trying to act like a hero.’

‘He doesn’t have any internal energy; he must be stupid.’

Darryl stared at Ocean coldly and repeated his word. “I said, get your dirty hands off her.”

“F*ck you! Do you have a death wish?” Ocean shouted.

Swoosh!

Ocean’s men rushed toward them when their leader shouted; they gave Darryl a cold glare as they waited for instruction. They were ready to chop him into pieces!

However, Darryl continued to stand there without a hint of fear on his face!

“Hey kid, you’re pretty funny.” Ocean laughed. “So

many of you, but you are the only one with the b*lls to stand out. You have a death wish, is that it?"

Darryl smiled and replied in an icy tone, "I'm only going to say this once. I don't care if you want to swindle people for money, but you can't have these women, so get your dirty hands off them. I'm not going to repeat myself again."

"Wow, okay. So you do want to die." Ocean chuckled from extreme anger. "Whack him and feed him to the fishes!"

No one had dared to talk to him in that tone during his years in the martial arts community! That puny kid must have a death wish when he threatened him.

A few of Ocean's men rushed charged toward Darryl.

"Honey—"

Lily almost burst into tears from the anxiety.

It was the Coastline Sect! Darryl had looked for trouble when he provoked them without any internal energy!

Darryl stayed as cool as a cucumber when the men approached him. He smiled and said, "Tell me, then, what should we do for you to let the girls go?"

The older man laughed.

Ocean thought that Darryl wanted to surrender, so

he grinned and said, "Give me 20 billion bucks."

"Oh." Darryl stared straight into his eyes with a smile. "I can give you 20 billion, but I don't think that you'll be alive to use it."

'What?'

Ocean was furious. 'Why is this f*cking kid so confident?' He could no longer suppress his anger; he raised his blade to strike Darryl.

Manny yelled at that precise moment. "Brother Ocean! Behind you!"

"What the f*ck are you yelling about?" Ocean cursed before he turned; he was flabbergasted.

All of the Coastline Sect's disciples and the students stood there frozen.

The entire Gold Beach became silent!

They could hear the sound of uniformed footsteps.

Then they saw about 3000 people a few hundred meters from them. They rushed toward the beach like waves. They wore black Chinese jackets, and they had weapons in their hands; they looked dignified!

The man who led the newcomers held a massive flag in his hand. It soared with the sea breeze majestically!

It was the Nine Dragon Justice Flag; they were from the Elysium Gate!

“We punish evil and uphold the good to bring justice for mankind!”

The disciples of Elysium Gate shouted in unison. Their voices shook the skies, and everyone within ten kilometers could hear them clearly!

Chapter 508

"They're from the Elysium Gate."

A sudden fear emerged in Ocean's mind!

The Elysium Gate had demolished more than a dozen evil sects within two weeks after their establishment. Their purpose was to bring justice to mankind, and they had made quite a reputation in the martial arts community!

The Coastline Sect had acted tyrannically around the beach.

They wondered whether the Elysium Gate was there for them.

The students were overwhelmed with emotions, and some of them were in tears of gratitude!

'Look at that Nine Dragon Justice Flag. They are from the Elysium Gate! They must be here to take Coastline Sect down! They're here to rescue us!'

The Elysium Gate had made statements in the martial arts community, and no one was unaware of their reputation!

Sects with dishonest practices had disappeared whenever the Nine Dragon Justice Flag made an

appearance. Therefore, Elysium Gate was regarded as the executors for justice!

Their uniformed footsteps shook the earth and overwhelmed others with emotions!

Many residents gathered around the scene as the flag got closer to students, and they stared at the flag with admiration!

The 3000 people included the Dixon quadruplets, and they approached the beach unhurriedly before finally they stopped right in front of Ocean.

Zephyr Dixon glared at Ocean coldly but his gaze burned with anger. "Ocean and River Powter, you have been causing troubles to others even though you are members of the martial arts community. The Elysium Gate will bring justice to mankind today; we're here to take the Coastline Sect down! Do you have last words?"

Flash!

The 3000 disciples unsheathed their swords in unison; an intense murderous aura rolled over them in an instant!

Blood drained from Ocean's face, and he trembled uncontrollably. "You are Zephyr Dixon from The Four Warlords?"

He had heard about the Dixon quadruplets as The

Four Warlords. The one who led the troop had to be Zephyr!

Ocean panicked when Zephyr chose not to answer him. "We can talk about this, Brother. The Coastline Sect has a legitimate business. We did nothing shady."

He sweated profusely!

Even though the Powter brothers were Level Three Martial Marquis, their men were only a mob without much power.

They dared not to offend the famous Elysium Gate.

The disciples from the Coastline Sect also sweated profusely; they did not even dare to fart!

Zephyr scanned the students around him with a slight smile, and he maintained his expression when he spotted Darryl.

Darryl texted him with an explicit reminder that he could not reveal his identity as the Sect Master. After all, the Six Sects still had their eyes on him.

Zephyr turned to Ocean again. "Nothing shady? We were just passing by, and it seems like you are here to con these students."

The students nodded.

"Yes! Please help us! They were threatening us."

"You have to get rid of these bullies—"

Zephyr nodded in acknowledgment at the crowd's clamor before he turned to Ocean again. He burst into anger. "Can you explain this?"

"Well... We..."

Ocean, who was taken aback, intended to deny his deeds but he felt only hopelessness when Declan and the others sold them out.

Ocean was extremely anxious because of the murderous aura that permeated from the Elysium Gate's disciples. He broke down and fell to his knees as he pleaded with a frown. "Brother Zephyr, can you give me a chance? I assure you that I will never do this again."

River added hurriedly, "Yes, we will be good people from now onward."

Chapter 509

They were aware that their denial could cost them their lives!

Zephyr smiled sinisterly and said, "Not every bad deed deserves forgiveness. Brothers, tie them up!"

"Those who don't comply will die!"

Zephyr's indifferent voice could be heard over the entire beach!

The Elysium Gate's disciples complied with the order and charged forward.

Ocean sweated profusely as there was no way that he could revolt in that situation!

He might even die that night!

All of the Coastline Sect's followers were tied up in ropes within a few minutes as none of them dared to resist!

"Spread the word," Zephyr's tone was cold as he stared at the sea. "Search every single asset owned by the Coastline Sect and distribute them to the locals! This sect is history from this day onward!"

"Understood!" The Elysium Gate's disciples

shouted in unison, and their voices shook the skies!
Then they proceeded to leave regally under Zephyr's lead!

A fisherman suddenly got down on his knees!

"Thank you, Elysium Gate! We are forever grateful for your help!" The fisherman in his 60s cried tears of gratitude!

He had started a domino-effect!

Plop! Plop!

More local knelt with extreme gratitude!

"Thank you, Elysium Gate, for helping us!"

"Thank you, Elysium Gate! Justice for mankind!"

"Our miserable days are finally over!"

The Coastline Sect had seized most of the resources near the beach during their years there. They had also oppressed the residents.

Elysium Gate had restored their peace when they got rid of the Coastline Sect. So, they were extremely grateful!

A few women had children in their arms when they thanked Elysium Gate non-stop as they watched them leave. Even the children imitated the adults and bowed in respect.

"As the residents of Gold Beach, we are here to thank Elysium Gate! We wish Sect Master Indomitable Darby success in conquering the martial arts community and come out on top!" An elderly man in the crowd threw his cane away with shaky hands and shouted with all his might.

"We wish Sect Master Indomitable Darby success in conquering the martial arts community and come out on top!"

"We wish the Sect Master Indomitable Darby success in conquering the martial arts community and come out on top!"

The residents of Gold Beach shouted together; their voices were hoarse after a while!

The students who witnessed the scene gave each other meaningful glances, and they were teary-eyed!

"The Elysium Gate is grand, indeed." Circe's rosy lips gaped in awe, and her face lit up with admiration.

"You're right. I wonder who is Indomitable Darby?" Yvette said softly as she bit her lips.

It was a close one. They could not imagine what would have happened if the Elysium Gate arrived a minute later.

Kent burst into laughter. "We are lucky to have bumped into the Elysium Gate! If it weren't for them, Darryl would have wet his pants already!"

Laughter erupted among the other students.

Some girls stared at Darryl with scorn as Daisy Palmer said, "Darryl, what were you thinking? Do you think you have the capability to be a hero? You would be dead if the Elysium Gate did not come in time! You might even get us in more trouble!"

Chapter 510

"She's right. Darryl, why did you do that? You have zero internal energy! You could've gotten us into more trouble with Ocean Powder if the Elysium Gate wasn't here!"

"Were you trying to be a hero? Could you even do it? You are just a live-in son-in-law!"

Darryl only shrugged in response to the criticisms. "You guys chickened out when the Coastline guys surrounded you, and none of you dared to speak out when the girls were getting harassed. I did have zero internal energy, but at least I have the guts to say something. I may be useless, but you guys are even more worthless than I am."

"You—"

The guys were speechless.

"Alright, that's enough, stop talking." Yvette sat near the bonfire with a light smile. "Aren't you guys hungry? Let's have some fish!"

She took a grilled fish and offered it to Darryl. "Thank you for what you did, Darryl."

Yvette looked at Darryl from top to toe. She was

amused that he dared to speak out even though he was powerless to do anything about it. He was brave and bold.

Darryl smiled politely as he took a few bites of the fish.

The gathering ended around 6.00 pm, and the students bid farewell to each other.

Kent offered to drive the two female students home with his Land Rover, and he called Megan Castello right after he sent the girls home.

"Meg, what are you doing? The gathering is over, can I take you out for a movie?" Kent asked excitedly.

Megan, who had just finished her shift, chuckled when she heard Kent's words. "I'll have to pass; I'm exhausted. Did you have fun with the gathering?"

Kent sighed and started to whine. "Forget it, I was in a good mood today, but that darn Darryl came along too! Things always go wrong when he's here. He is such a jinx! We almost got killed by the Coastline Sect—"

Megan was in shock when she heard that.

'Darryl's back?'

--

Oriental Pearl, 7.00 pm.

It was the most luxurious hotel in Donghai City. Only reputable people would be willing to spend money there.

The hotel was almost always fully packed since it was an indicator of status for one to dine there. However, it was exceptionally deserted that day, and there were no cars near its entrance.

Darryl called Wayne Woodall and rented the whole hotel to hold a feast for the Elysium Gate's disciples!

The Dixon quadruplets and their 3000 disciples were already there when Darryl reached. The banquet hall was fully seated.

"Greetings, Sect Master!"

The disciples stood up and greeted as loud as thunder the moment Darryl stepped into the hall.

"Thank you. Please, sit, my brothers." Darryl waved his arm, a gesture for them to forgo the formalities.

Darryl had a golden mask on so that his identity as the Sect Master would not be exposed.

Darryl looked around and saw a dozen men were tied up in the corner of the banquet hall; the Ten Villains and the Powter brothers were there.

"Sect Master?" Zephyr approached Darryl and said

respectfully, "All of our Elysium Gate brothers are here, so I had to bring the Ten Villains and the Powter twins here, else they might escape."

Darryl did not reply to Zephyr; he walked toward their captives.

"Sect Master Darby, both of us are willing to surrender!" Ocean shouted expectantly. He knew that he would be murdered if he refused to yield to the Elysium Gate.

Darryl nodded and turned to the Ten Villains. "What about you guys?"

All of them had a unique appearance, which was interesting. Oldest Villain One was an overweight man with a chubby face. He had a striking five-inches long scar on his left cheek.

Old Villain Two looked smart and refined; he had a striking appearance.

Old Villain Eight was the most interesting one. He had an afro, and he was as skinny as a twig. He looked like a living feather duster from a distance!

The Ten Villains stared at Darryl intensely; it was clear they did not want to give in to his demands. Oldest Villain One finally muttered coldly, "Just kill us already!"

"How stubborn." Darryl chuckled and flipped his

palm as a dozen medicines appeared.

Darryl had prepared the Heaven Cult Elixirs beforehand as they could be pretty useful in manipulating people!

Everyone in the martial arts community knew that the Heaven Cult Elixirs were unique medicine that only the Grandmaster of Heaven had! Once ingested, an antidote must be taken within a period, or the person would suffer the poison!

Everyone knew about the Heaven Cult Elixir!

Darryl forced the elixirs into their mouths without any hesitation.

"Why do you have these?" Oldest Villain One asked in surprise.

Darryl shrugged and grinned. "I'm not going to lie; I am an Elixir Master. I can produce hundreds of these without breaking a sweat. You had the elixir today, so I am going to give you the antidote if you join us. If you refuse, you can wait for the poison to kick in and suffer."

The Ten Villains broke down immediately!

They knew about the elixir's effects! Many bold and tough men had begged for the antidote when its poison kicked in!

Chapter 511

"Yes, Sect Master, I bow to you in surrender. I will join the Elysium Gate." Old Villain Eight was the first to get down on his knees.

"I surrender too!"

"Me too."

In less than two minutes, tens of people knelt on the floor. Everyone decided not to struggle.

"Release them!" Darryl shouted with a smile. Levin immediately walked toward them and released all the ropes.

Darryl waved his hand happily. "Brothers, the success of Elysium Gate was due to your effort. Let's all enjoy the meal today. Cheers, Brothers!"

Everyone raised their glass. "Cheers to Sect Master!"

Everyone enjoyed the meal as they bonded with each other. They hugged and got drunk.

The Ten Villains, Ocean Powder and River Powder, who had just joined the sect, blended in well with the group, and they all drank happily.

A few of the men got too drunk, and they had fallen

under the table.

After three rounds of drinking, Darryl's head started to spin. As he did not have internal energy, he could not force the alcohol out of his body. He stood up and shouted, "Brothers, stop! Listen to me!"

Even though everyone was drunk, they still put their drinks down obediently and looked at Darryl.

"Ocean Powter, River Powter," Darryl said.

"Yes, Sir!" The two brothers rushed toward Darryl and knelt in front of him.

"From today onward, I shall award you as Henry Bi-General," Darryl said casually. He had just thought of the name as he spoke.

"Ten Villains, come here too," Darryl said.

The Ten Villains quickly walked toward Darryl and knelt in front of him.

Darryl looked at them and said, "The name Ten Villains does not sound pleasant. Remember, once you join Elysium Gate, you must do a lot of good deeds. I shall ignore all the bad things you had done before this, but if you were to repeat that, I would have no mercy on you!"

"Yes, Sir!" Oldest Villain One said.

Darryl nodded. "From today onward, you shall be named The Ten Heaven Masters."

"Thank you, Sect Master." Everyone was delighted with the new names.

"Darryl sighed. He had drunk too much; he walked to the restroom to wash his face so that he could sober up.

The Elysium Gate was finally on its right track. Henry B-General, formerly known as Ocean and River Power, were Level Three Master Generals. The Four Warlords and Wind Rain Thunder Power were Level One Master Generals, and the Ten Heaven Masters were Master Generals too. The power of Elysium Gate was terrifying.

Darryl washed his face and headed back for another round when his cell phone suddenly rang.

Darryl looked at the screen and furrowed his eyebrows!

Megan! What did she want? Images of the incident at the Lion Slaughtering Conference appeared in Darryl's mind.

That lady had stabbed Darryl's abdomen, and he almost lost his life because of her. Why did she call him?

Darryl wanted to disconnect the call, but he

hesitated and answered it instead.

"My dear brother." Megan's voice came from the call. "Are you free now?"

Kent told her that Darryl was back in Donghai City. She hesitated for a long while until she finally had the courage to call Darryl.

"What do you want?" Darryl asked coldly.

Darryl was not angry at her when she injured him with a sword. Abbess Mother Serendipity had forced her to do that. It was difficult for her.

Chapter 512

At the other end of the line, Megan could feel Darryl's coldness. She bit her lips and wanted to cry. "My dear brother, I am truly sorry. I didn't want to hurt you that day, but Master wanted me to do it. I had no choice."

Megan said hopefully, "I want to meet you so that I can apologize to you personally. May I do that?"

Darryl sat on a chair after he walked out of the washroom. He drank a sip of wine and did not say a word.

"My dear brother..." Megan felt terrible. "I am sorry. Please, just let me meet you once, or I will feel guilty my whole life. If you don't want to meet me, then I will kill myself right now."

Darryl answered with a sigh. "Where to meet you?"

Darryl did not want to meet her. However, he felt as if he had no choice after he heard what she had said. He would only see her once.

Megan was thrilled when Darryl agreed to meet her. "You have finally agreed to meet me. This is terrific!" Megan was as happy as a child.

Megan had felt so guilty. She was worried that

Darryl might ignore her. She felt delighted that Darryl agreed to meet her.

"I shall wait for you at the Blue Dream Bar." Then Megan disconnected the call.

...

At the Blue Dream Bar.

The bar was far from the city center. It was in a quiet area, and the business was only moderately well. However, it had unique interior decorations.

Music played in the air, and men and women danced on the dance floor. It was a great atmosphere.

Megan was already in the room when Darryl arrived. When she saw him, she immediately stood up to greet him. "You are here."

Megan felt very guilty; she was not as arrogant as her usual self. She was kind.

Darryl nodded as he looked at her. He had not seen Megan for a while, and she looked even sexier.

Megan wore a pair of dark blue jeans with a tight top; it portrayed her body flawlessly, and she looked exceptionally sexy.

Once they sat down, Megan asked cautiously, "Are you still angry at me?"

Darryl smiled, but he did not say a word.

Megan bit her lips. "I know you will never forgive me, right?"

Darryl sighed. He could forget about the fact that Megan had injured him, but Yvonne had agreed to marry Jeremy to rescue him, even though she did not need to do that. He could let the incident go as Megan seemed apologetic.

Darryl laughed. "It's fine. Don't worry about it. I know you had no choice; I forgive you. Excuse me; I want to go to the washroom.

Darryl had drunk too much with the Elysium Gate earlier. He felt so embarrassed as he had to go to the washroom frequently. Darryl walked out of the room and rushed toward the toilet.

Megan was amused by Darryl's expression, and she was slightly more relaxed. She really did appreciate her relationship with Darryl. She hoped that the incident at the Lion Slaughter Conference would not affect their relationship.

Chapter 513

Megan was relieved when Darryl agreed to forgive her. Her cell phone in her pocket rang. Megan's jeans were tight, so she struggled to pull it out. Her face froze when she saw the number on the screen.

It was Jean, a member of the younger generation. Megan had never had a good relationship with Jean, so it must be her master.

Megan answered the call immediately. As expected, Abbess Mother Serendipity's voice said, "Megan."

"Yes, Master," Megan answered softly. It was rather late; why would her master call her?

"I heard that Darryl is back to Donghai City, do you know about it?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked casually. Megan's body shivered; she could hardly hold onto her cell phone.

How did Abbess Mother Serendipity learn about Darryl? Did she know that Megan was meeting Darryl? Her master hated him. Megan shook as she said, "I—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity interrupted her. "Megan, you are the most capable member in our Emei family, and you are also the eldest disciple. I

have an important task for you."

Megan sighed in relief; it was only a task. She smiled and nodded. "What task is it, Master? I shall complete it."

"Great." Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded to herself as she spoke carefully. "As you know, during the Lion Slaughter Conference, that loser, Darryl, won the first prize. He has the right to execute the Golden Lion, but he let him go. Golden Lion must have given the Supreme Mystery Scripture to Darryl."
"

Abbess Mother Serendipity paused slightly before she said, "Everyone knows that there are seven books for the Supreme Mystery Scripture. If one could gather all the books and understand the secret in it, one could conquer the whole world. This scripture should not be in Darryl's hands. Find a chance to meet him and then steal the scripture from him. Do you understand?"

What?

Megan's body shivered, and she bit her lips tightly.

How could she do that?

Megan cried. "Master, I can't do that."

Megan was not willing to do that.

Megan had stabbed Darryl with her sword at the

Lion Slaughter Conference. She still felt guilty about that. How could she steal the scripture from Darryl? That was not right.

"Why not? Why can't you do it?" Abbess Mother Serendipity sounded unhappy. "I'm warning you; the Supreme Mystery Scripture is very important. It is essential for our Emei family too. Even if there is no benefit to our Emei family to have the scripture, we still cannot allow it to be in the wrong person's hand. You'll have to do it even if you don't want to."

"Master, please give this task to another person, please..."

"No." Abbess Mother Serendipity was stern. "You have some connection with that useless man. Since you injured him, he would definitely agree to meet if you were to ask him out. Megan, you cannot disobey me."

"You are a very talented lady, and you are the leader of the younger generation of the Emei family, so don't disappoint me. If you refuse to get the scripture, then our relationship shall end here," Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly. ①

She ended the call immediately.

Megan sat there in shock and worried. Her happiness vanished at that moment; she wanted to cry.

Chapter 514

On the other end of the call, Darryl hummed as he walked out of the washroom and back into the room.

When he reached the corridor outside the room, he heard a familiar voice.

"Darryl?"

He looked at where the voice came from and saw a room of beautiful ladies; they were smiling and chatting.

It was Circe, Evelyn, and a few of their friends.

Circe stood up and smiled. "Darryl, you are here. What a coincidence!" She left after her gathering earlier to meet with her friends and saw Darryl unexpectedly.

Everyone looked at Darryl.

"Isn't he the dumb man?"

"I still have the picture of him washing Evelyn's feet."

All the chaos made Darryl feel embarrassed. Sh*t! They still remembered about the feet-washing incident.

"Darryl, sit down." Circe stood up.

Back at the beach, when the Coastline Sect people wanted to bully her, Darryl was the only one who stood up to them. Circe appreciated his help.

Not long ago too, Darryl had released Evelyn's grandfather. She had yet to repay his favor; hence, Circe wanted to invite Darryl for a drink.

"Sorry, I can't. Megan is waiting for me in the other room." Darryl smiled and politely rejected her. Megan was rather famous in Donghai City as she was the Criminal Investigation Team Leader; everyone had heard about her.

"Let's invite Megan to join as well, shall we?" Circe asked excitedly.

When she saw what had happened, Evelyn stomped her feet. "Circe, we are here for fun, why should we invite the useless man?"

Evelyn was annoyed to see Darryl; how could she have a drink with him? Darryl made her call him Brother before he released her grandfather. How shameful was that?

Circe smiled. "What a coincidence! Let's sit together. Is that okay, Darryl?"

Darryl could not reject her anymore, so he nodded

and brought Megan to their room to have a few drinks with Circe and her friends.

Darryl was lucky that night. There were so many ladies in the room, and he was the only man. His eyes were so busy; he looked at the women one by one.

Megan's face did not look good. Her master had given her an impossible task; she could hardly breathe.

After a few rounds, Darryl realized that he had drunk too much.

He had drunk a dozen bottles before that at the Oriental Pearl, and he had a few more with the ladies. His head was dizzy.

"Hey Darryl, can't take it anymore?" one of the ladies asked as she looked at Darryl. "You are worse than us; drunk after only a few drinks."

"Yes, Darryl. Finish your drink," another one of the ladies said.

Everyone pressured Darryl to drink more as he was the only man there.

Darryl's mind blanked; he could not reject the ladies. He drank one after another. He was so drunk that he did not know how to refuse anymore.

Finally, Circe could not stand it anymore. She said

softly, "Enough, you all have to stop forcing him to drink, he has reached his limit—"

Darryl had no internal energy; it would be bad for his body if he drank too much.

Right after she spoke, one of her friends laughed. "Hey, Circe, are you interested in Darryl?" All of the other ladies started to laugh at Circe.

Circe's face was scarlet red; she did not know what to say.

Chapter 515

Evelyn kept her silence; she felt upset.

'Just keep doing it. Let him get drunk and not wake up anymore.'

The ladies continued to pressure him; Darryl's face was red after countless drinks. There were dozens of empty bottles around his feet.

Finally, Darryl could not take it anymore; he fell asleep on the table.

The few ladies smiled as they shook Darryl's shoulders. "Darryl, wake up. Let's drink some more."
"

"He is drunk already?"

"That's no fun."

A few ladies stood up and said, "Circe, let's go. He is so weak; it's no fun at all. Let's go for a movie." Then they headed out of the room.

Circe felt sorry; she said to Megan, "Megan, I'm sorry. My friends are too playful. Darryl is drunk, did we interrupt both of you?"

Megan waved her hands. "No worries. We're only

here for a drink. Go ahead with your movies. I will send Darryl home."

"Fine, we shall make a move then." Circe nodded and left the place with the rest of her friends.

Megan and Darryl were the only ones left in the room. Darryl was still asleep on the table.

Megan bit her lips as she looked closely at Darryl. She felt complicated.

She saw a book in Darryl's jacket. It was the Supreme Mystery Scripture. It seemed like Darryl had been keeping the scripture with him all the time.

Megan sighed. Her master's words played in her mind.

She had already hurt Darryl once; she almost took his life at the Lion Slaughter Conference too. He had only gotten better, but she was about to steal from him.

However, her master would be very disappointed if she could not get the scripture.

Megan clenched her teeth and reached out to grab the Supreme Mystery Scripture.

When she saw the words 'Supreme Mystery Scripture' on the cover, she was delighted and yet

she felt guilty.

Her attention was drawn to the Celestial Silk Worm Armor. It was apparent that Darryl was wearing it.

The armor shone under the dim lights of the ba; she had seen it at the Lion Slaughter Conference.

Nothing could penetrate the armor.

Megan bit her lips. She did not know what was in her mind when she removed Darryl's shirt and took the Celestial Silk Worm Armor.

After she removed the armor, she could see Darryl's muscular body.

There were dozens of scars on his body; they were wounds from the past. They made Darryl look even more manly.

"Wow!"

Megan held the Celestial Silk Worm Armor in her hands and admired Darryl's body.

That was the first time she was so close to a man. She had not even seen Kent's bare body. Her face was scarlet red, and her heart raced. After a few minutes, she finally gathered her mind. Just like a fugitive on the run, she took both the Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silk Worm Armor, shoved them into her handbag and quickly left the room.

Chapter 516

No customer should access the security control room. Megan rotated her wrist, and a silver needle appeared in her hands. She flipped the needle, and it cut off the wire that was connected to the security control room.

Megan had perfect knowledge with security cameras as she dealt with them in the cases daily.

That was the latest model of the security system; one only needed to cut the wire, and the entire security system would collapse and stop working.

"Darryl, I am sorry. I do not want to do this, but I have to obey my Master's order. I don't have a choice." Megan walked toward the bar exit as she mumbled to herself. She sat in her car and took out the Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silk Worm Amor.

"Darryl, my master said that the Supreme Mystery Scripture is very important. It cannot be on anyone with evil intention." Megan bit her lips and mumbled further, "You are connected to the Eternal Life Palace Sect. We shall keep these scriptures and armor on your behalf so that the Eternal Life Palace Sect would not be able to get

them."

When she thought about it like that, Megan felt slightly better. Then she drove off in her car.

At the Blue Dream bar.

Darryl woke up and shouted, "Come on; let's continue drinking."

He was stunned when he opened his eyes.

Sh*t! Where was everybody? He was the only one left there. He felt embarrassed as he was drunk in front of the ladies.

Darryl slapped his forehead; he felt unwell. Then he felt as if something was not right.

'Sh*t! Who removed my shirt?' Darryl looked for his shirt. He only managed to find his shirt and jacket.

Where was the Supreme Mystery Scripture? Darryl shook his head. His Celestial Silk Worm Armor was gone too!

The Supreme Mystery Scripture was a gift from the elder Zion.

To get the scripture, Darryl had to join the battle at the Lion Slaughter Conference; he almost died from Megan's attack.

He had used his life to exchange for the scripture.

How could it be gone?

The Celestial Silk Worm Armor had protected him countless times. He would have been dead if he had not had it. He could not afford to lose it.

Darryl panicked. He sweated profusely as he searched the corners of the room, but he could not find it!

Sh*t!

Darryl was angry and worried; he walked speedily to the reception counter. "Hurry, hurry, let me see the security camera footage."

The scripture must have been stolen while he was drunk.

When she realized that Darryl was in a panic, the lady at the reception counter knew Darryl must have lost something important. She quickly retrieved the footage from the corridor.

It was not unusual for people to lose their belongings in the bar as there were too many people there.

Darryl opened his eyes wide and stared at the screen carefully.

"What kind of security camera footage is this?" Darryl shouted.

The footage was pitch black; he could not see anything at all.

"Sir, about this..." The lady at the reception counter was apologetic. "I am sorry, Sir, maybe the security camera is faulty, it was still working fine yesterday."

Darryl was worried, he could not hear any other explanation. Then he walked out of the bar. He sent a text to Megan to ask about her whereabouts.

Megan was driving when she saw Darryl's text. She hesitated before she replied, "An emergency came up, so I had to leave."

When Darryl saw her reply, he asked about Circe and her friends. Why did they leave too? He was the only one left behind.

Megan replied shortly, "I am not sure. I left earlier than them; I am not sure when they left."

Darryl sighed as he held his fist tightly; he tried to remember everything that had happened that night.

Chapter 517

After he spent half a day thinking, Darryl patted his thigh. It must have been Evelyn who stole the scripture.

All of her friends were so passionate about feeding him with more drinks. Evelyn must have ordered them to do that. Did she get him drunk so that she could steal the scripture?

Darryl was furious; he dialed Evelyn's number. He got his number when he was helping Evelyn to rescue her grandmother.

Once the call was connected, Darryl was so furious that he shouted into the phone. "Evelyn, don't you think you've crossed the line? Your grandfather gave me the Supreme Mystery Scripture. How could you steal it?"

"What are you talking about?"

Evelyn was at the movies with her friends. She was furious when Darryl scolded her. "Are you crazy? You're a monster, are you crazy? Go away!"

She immediately hung up after that!

"Sh*t!" Darryl was furious.

...

At the other place.

After Megan stole the scripture, the first place she went to was Darby's residence.

She walked toward the side hall and saw Abbess Mother Serendipity there. She was enjoying a cup of tea.

A few members from the Emei Sect were there as well.

When Abbess Mother Serendipity saw Megan, she smiled and said, "Megan, why are you here so late?"

Megan bit her lips and said, "Master, I have completed the task."

As she spoke, she took out the Supreme Mystery Scripture and handed it to Abbess Mother Serendipity.

The Supreme Mystery Scripture? ①

Abbess Mother Serendipity was delighted to see that. She stood up and took the scripture. She scrutinized the pages and got very emotional; the scripture was genuine.

"How did you manage to get it?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked as she laughed. Megan had

managed to deliver the book after only three hours after she gave the order. What a lovely surprise!

Megan felt conflicted; she said softly, "Right after you called me, I met up with Darryl. Then I found a good opportunity to take the scripture, and this armor too."

She handed the Celestial Silk Worm Armor to her Master.

"What a good armor!" Abbess Mother Serendipity sighed as she took the armor. That was why Darryl was so powerful at the Lion Slaughter Conference. It was all for the armor.

"This is great."

Abbess Mother Serendipity felt proud; she nodded. "Megan, I did not choose wrongly. You did well. Even though the scripture and armor are not rare items, they still should not land at the hands of those with evil intention. You do not have to feel guilty that you have stolen them. You are doing a good deed for everyone."

"Yes," Megan replied softly.

"Master." A slim shadow walked toward them. It was Jean.

Jean spoke politely as she approached them. "Master, there's someone here to meet you. He said

that he is from the Elysium Gate. His name is Zephyr Dixon."

What? Why were there people from the Elysium Gate there?

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her eyebrows and said, "Let him in."

Even though Abbess Mother Serendipity was angry when people of the Elysium Gate rescued Dax, she could not deny the fact that they had helped to bring justice to society. Elysium Gate deserved the respect they commanded. 1

Right after Abbess Mother Serendipity finished her words, a tall man walked into the hall.

The man was dressed in black. "How are you, Abbess Mother Serendipity? I am Zephyr Dixon from Elysium Gate.

If there were any Elysium Gate members there at that moment, they could easily point out that the person was not Zephyr and he was not from Elysium Gate.

Chapter 518

Abbess Mother Serendipity had never met Zephyr. She did not know that he was an imposter.

Even though she had briefly met Wind Rain Thunder Power when they helped to rescue Jean and the rest who were abducted by Dax, she did not know who they were. So, she could not recognize that the person was an imposter.

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded. “Why are you here, Warlord Zephyr?”

Almost everyone had heard about the Elysium Gate, and their members Henry Bi-Generals, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters. So, Abbess Mother Serendipity addressed the imposter as Warlord Zephyr.

The man in black smiled and replied politely, “Abbess Mother Serendipity, Elysium Gate had only formed not too long ago, so we would like to invite Abbess Mother Serendipity for a drink, to know each other.”

Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled as she replied proudly, “The Emei Sect is a sect with premier status, so we would never join any invitation for

drinks. Even though Elysium Gate is gaining a reputation in society, I don't think you are qualified to send us an invitation."

The Six Sects had a few hundred years of history. How could a sect as small as the Elysium Gate have the qualification to send an invite to the Emei Sect? That was impossible.

The man in black was not angry; instead, he laughed. "You are right. The Elysium Gate is the newcomer, and so, we are not yet qualified to send an invitation to the Emei Sect. However, our Sect Master had recently solved the Supreme Mystery Scripture mystery. If Abbess Mother Serendipity is interested in the solution, please kindly accept our invitation."

What?

Had Indomitable Darby unravelled the Supreme Mystery Scripture mystery?

Abbess Mother Serendipity shivered!

The Supreme Mystery Scripture had seven scriptures. If one could solve the mystery after they gathered the scriptures, one would earn the power to control the whole world.

For the past few thousand years, no one was able to gather all the seven scriptures, not to mention to

solve the mystery.

Indomitable Darby had solved the mystery without the complete set of scriptures.

It was rather unbelievable.

“Are you serious?” Abbess Mother Serendipity asked as she stared at the man.

If that were true, it would be an incredible event in society. How could she miss the invitation?

Everyone would want to know about the Supreme Mystery Scripture mystery!

The man in black answered with a smile. “I am Zephyr of the Elysium Gate, and I would never lie.”

Abbess Mother Serendipity could not hide her excitement; she stood up and said, “Great, I shall accept your sincere invitation.”

She turned to Jean and said, “Gather our disciples and join me to go meet Indomitable Darby, the Sect Master of Elysium Gate.”

“As you wish.”

Then, Jean left to gather everyone else.

The man in black smiled. “Very well, I shall wait for you here.”

After half an hour, Abbess Mother Serendipity had

gathered about 50 of her disciples. They left the Darby mansion with the man in black.

According to that man, Sect Master Indomitable Darby was waiting for them at the beach.

Abbess Mother Serendipity and the Emei disciples trailed behind the man in black. Once they left the Darby mansion, Abbess Mother Serendipity suddenly furrowed her eyebrows and raised her hand. "Wait!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity looked ghastly. She was still fine a moment ago, but she suddenly felt weak, and she could not use her energy.

She could not release the internal energy in her as well! Something seemed to block her abdomen! Those were signs that she was poisoned! Abbess Mother Serendipity could barely stand up.

The man in black turned and smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, what is the matter?"

He smiled devilishly as he spoke.

Chapter 519

Abbess Mother Serendipity was about to speak when she was interrupted by the man in black.

He smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, are you feeling weak and not able to use your internal energy?"

At that moment, Abbess Mother Serendipity's sentiment changed. She looked at him with suspicion. "How did you know?"

The man in black laughed loudly. "Of course, I knew. I was the one who poisoned you."

What?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was surprised, and she was furious. She was also in shock! What poison was that? It was so powerful that she did not even realize it!

The man smiled widely as he held out a small jade bottle and looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "I used the Weak Poison."

Weak Poison! There was a rumor that the poison came with a pleasant scent. Once one inhaled it, one would feel weak and would not be able to use one's

internal energy. Abbess Mother Serendipity did detect a smell, but she ignored it as she had thought that it was her disciple's perfume. She never thought that it was the Weak Poison.

It was an extremely rare poison.

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity was surprised and furious when she heard that. She stared angrily at the man.

She had been in the society for so long, and she had never expected to be poisoned by an ordinary man. How shameful was that?

Megan and Jean and others pulled out their swords as they stared angrily at the man in black. How dared he poison their master?

The man remained calm. He looked at Megan and the rest as he said casually, "Don't worry, your master wasn't the only who was poisoned, the rest of you are too! However, your master's internal energy is stronger; therefore, she is showing the signs earlier. It's about time for all of you to feel it too." ①

Megan immediately realized that she could not use her internal energy, and she felt very weak.

The rest of the Emei disciples felt the same, too; all

of them shivered in fear.

"I can't use my internal energy."

"Me, too."

Then all of the Emei disciples fainted on the ground.

Yes!

The man in black clapped, and other men in black appeared. All of them looked strong and powerful.

Then, the men tied up Megan and the rest. Abbess Mother Serendipity's hands were bound too.

"You are not from Elysium Gate!" Abbess Mother Serendipity had finally realized that.

Even though Abbess Mother Serendipity had never met anyone from Elysium Gate, she knew that they were honest people! ①

A faithful Elysium Gate member would never do such a devilish act!

The man in black smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, please calm down. You will know who we are once we reach our destination."

'Abbess Mother Serendipity has such a strong personality!' the man thought.

The man in black waved his hand, and his comrades shoved Abbess Mother Serendipity, Megan and the

**rest of the disciples into the few cars beside them.
Then they disappeared into the darkness.**

Chapter 520

At the same time, in the meditation room at the Shaolin temple.

Shaolin Sect's red-robed Sect Master Endless sat there in meditation. Master Reed was there too.

A disciple ran to the door and said politely, "Masters, someone is at the door outside. He claimed that he is Zephyr from the Elysium Gate. He said that he needs to meet with Master urgently."

Zephyr from the Elysium Gate?

Master Endless opened his eyes and nodded. "Very well, I shall meet him."

Then he stood up and walked toward the front hall.

Elysium Gate was quite famous lately. They managed to settle many of the bad organisations and devilish groups in just a short time. Their good deeds were admirable. Master Endless admired their work and had wanted to meet them.

Zephyr was one of the Four Warlords. Master Endless was delighted to be able to meet him.

In just one day, not only the Six Sects had received an invitation from Elysium Gate's Zephyr, but other

groups did, too. They had received the invitation at the same time.

All of them experienced the same problem. The Master left with his disciples, and then they were poisoned with the Weak Poison. The men in black had managed to abduct them effortlessly.

...

At the same time, at the Lyndon Real Estate's president's office.

The company belonged to Darryl, and Jade was the general manager. That was the first time Darryl went to the president's office.

He looked at the door and sat on the chair. Then he took out the Yin Herb from his pocket.

Darryl was excited. Once he had taken the herb, he would have all of his powers back.

Darryl sighed before he took the herbs without any hesitation.

Ring!

Once the herbs were in his mouth, he felt an energy in his body connected to his internal energy in his abdomen as it slowly returned to him.

After about half an hour, Darryl stood up slowly. He felt refreshed! He sensed the energy flowed in his

body.

He had taken the Yang Herbs earlier, and then he had taken the Yin Herbs. The combination of the Yang and Yin energy had not only restored his internal energy, but it had also raised his cultivation to Level Five Master General!

He laughed again.

Since he was a Level Five Master General, he only needed to take a Godly Pill, and he would be elevated to a Level One Martial Marquis.

Darryl excitedly popped a Godly Pill into his mouth without any hesitation.

The Godly Pill would not have an immediate effect. He would need to wait about an hour for it to take effect. In the meantime, Darryl had asked Jade to present the Lyndon Real Estate's performance.

After all those times, Jade had looked even more attractive. She was dressed in a business suit that showed off her perfect and sexy body.

Jade was a little nervous when she met with Darryl. She stood politely after she put down the files and greeted him softly, "Father."

Jade was famous in Donghai City because she ran the Lyndon Real Estate. Everyone would call her Sister Jade. She blushed as she addressed Darryl as

her father.

Chapter 521

Darryl looked at Jade and nodded. "How is the company doing presently?"

"Father, Lyndon Real Estate achieved an annual income of around 300 million," Jade reported to Darryl.

Jade had recently acquired a few more useful land banks. Felix Blakely had always monopolized Donghai City's real estate. Since he had left to do businesses in other cities, Donghai City's resources were left with Lyndon Real Estate.

After he listened to Jade's report, Darryl complimented her on her effort and let her continue with her work.

Once Jade had left, Darryl took a deep breath.

He sighed.

The internal energy in his body was suddenly activated. The Godly Pill's effect had kicked in. He had been upgraded to a Level One Martial Marquis!

Crack! Crack!

Darryl could hear sounds from the bones in his body. It was an incredible event when a cultivator

upgraded from a Master General to a Martial Marquis.

He laughed again.

Finally, Darryl stood up; he was very excited! He punched the air, and it broke into black ashes!

How powerful!

Darryl was delighted! He had been upgraded to a Level One Martial Marquis. He also had pure Yang internal energy, and two other skills—the Ascension of the Nine Dragon and the Single Finger Wonder.

If he were to try his best, he would be able to defeat a Level Three Martial Marquis.

If he had not lost the Celestial Silk Worm Armor, he would be even more powerful!

When he thought of what had happened to his Celestial Silk Worm Armor, he immediately lost all his excitement. He sat down on the chair, lit a cigarette, and took a deep breath.

The Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silk Worm Armor were treasures that everyone wanted. How could he have lost them both?

Darryl sighed. Then his cell phone rang.

It was Zephyr. When Darryl answered the call, he

could hear the panic in Zephyr's voice at the other end of the line.

"Sect Master! I have bad news! Someone pretended to be from Elysium Gate, and abducted people from all of the Six Sects and other groups as well."

Zephyr panted as he continued to say, "The imposters used the Weak Poison to poison everyone before they abducted them. The rest of their groups are looking for Elysium Gate for revenge! What should we do?"

What?

Someone pretended to be from Elysium Gate?

And they had abducted people from the Six Sects?

Darryl shivered; he was shocked to hear that.

The Six Sects were sects with a long history, and they were extremely powerful.

The Sect Masters from the Six Sects were the top leaders in their society.

However, all of them had been abducted. Who were those people who pretended to be from the Elysium Gate?

Darryl was surprised and furious when he heard about that. He was worried too!

Sh*t! He had to get to the bottom of the incidents.

Darryl asked calmly, "Do you know who those people are?"

Zephyr replied in shame, "Sect Master, I had tried to investigate once I heard about this news, but I could not find who was behind this. However, one of our members reported that he saw everyone from the Six Sects were locked at the Wishing Star Tower.

Chapter 522

Wishing Star Tower? Darryl furrowed his eyebrows.

Zephyr continued to say, "Sect Master, I have put everyone on standby, we can surround the Wishing Star Tower in no time at all. Sect Master, what do you—"

Darryl interrupted Zephyr before he could finish his words. He shook his head. "Don't take any action, wait for my command."

They had abducted all the influential leaders.

Regardless of what method they used, they must have a strong background! The Elysium Gate was not their match. Darryl did not want any unnecessary injury or death on his hands.

Darryl said, "Get Henry Bi-General, the Ten Heaven Masters and the Four Warlords. We'll head there together."

All sixteen of them were Martial Marquis; it would be easier to retreat if there was any danger.

"Yes, Sect Master!"

Darryl ended his call and headed toward the door to leave for the Wishing Star Tower.

...

At Donghai City's Wishing Star Tower.

The Wishing Start Tower was located in the suburban area of Donghai city. It was built during the Song Dynasty. It had always been maintained and refurbished over the past hundreds of years. It was also a famous tourist spot at Donghai City.

Over the past few years, with the rapid development of Donghai City, there were more and more tourism spots, and the Wishing Star Tower had been neglected.

The tower only had 13 floors, but it looked really grand. Unfortunately, all the Sect Masters were locked in it.

There was a mall below the tower, and it could accommodate tens of thousands of people. The floor was covered with white jade tiles; it looked magnificent.

At that moment, many men in black stood at the mall.

The men looked unusual. They had exceptional energy levels. The lowest level among them was Martial Marquis, and two of them were even Martial Saints! They were the ones who had abducted the Sect Masters.

A chair was placed among the men in black, and a beautiful lady sat on it. It was apparent that they served the lady.

The lady was extremely beautiful; she had a perfect body figure. All the students at Hexad School would be stunned to see her beauty.

The beautiful lady was none other than the goddess in their school, Yvette Lane.

She looked extremely attractive and cold as she sat on the chair.

One of the men in black approached her. "Princess, we have captured many of the masters from the World Universe. We have locked them in the Wishing Star Tower. What should we do next?"

The man had addressed Yvette as Princess. She was the New World Emperor's daughter; she was Princess Yvette.

For the past few years, the New World Emperor had wanted to conquer the World Universe. He had planned to act through the World Universe's sect leaders; eventually, he would take over the entire world.

The plan might sound simple, but it was very challenging to be executed. They needed a candidate who was not only good in martial arts,

but they had to be smart and brave enough to head to the World Universe to execute the task, too.

Among all the people in the kingdom, none of them was suitable for the job. They were either brave but not smart, or smart but not brave.

The New World Emperor decided to let his beloved daughter, Princess Yvette, go to the New World and capture the Six Sect's leaders.

Princess Yvette was not only smart, she looked beautiful too. She would definitely complete the task.

When Princess Yvette arrived at the World Universe, she had heard about the Hexad School that was built and managed by the Six Sects. Hence, she joined the school as a student to gather news about the Six Sects. Then, the New World Emperor sent someone to get the Weak Poison to her.

The Weak Poison was very rare in both worlds, and the New World Emperor had sent all that he had to Yvette. Anyone lower than a Martial Saint would immediately be poisoned when they smelled it.

Yvette had used all the Weak Poison that she had; that was how she managed to capture all the leaders.

"How many people did we get?" Yvette asked.

One of the men bowed as he said politely, "

Princess, we have captured about 1000 people, and more than 50 of them are above the Martial Marquis level."

Chapter 523

When she heard the numbers, Yvette stood up slowly and smiled. "Great job, Royal Guard Dragon. You did well. You did not disappoint me."

The twelve men behind Yvette were the Twelve Royal Guards. Each of them represented the twelve zodiacs—Royal Guard Rat, Royal Guard Ox, Royal Guard Tiger, and the rest of the zodiac animals.

Among them, Royal Guard Rat and Royal Guard Ox were Martial Saints. The rest of the group were Martial Marquis.

All Twelve Royal Guards had their own unique capabilities, and they were extremely powerful. The New World Emperor sent them to protect Yvette.

"Princess, there is that something I don't understand," the Royal Guard asked as he knelt in front of Yvette.

"Speak," Yvette replied.

The Royal Guard Rat scratched his head. "Princess, we have captured all of these leaders, so why don't we just kill all of them? Why do we need to bring them to the Wishing Star Tower?"

Yvette smiled. "What is the point of killing them?"

There are so many elites in the World Universe, and we will not be able to kill all of them. Isn't it better if we capture them alive and let the World Universe be chaotic enough that they would kill each other?"

She was right. They captured the leaders to create chaos in the World Universe, and let them kill each other!

During the students' gathering at the Hexad School, Yvette had witnessed how powerful the Elysium Gate was; it was mind-blowing.

That was where she came up with the idea to capture the elites. She wanted to humiliate them and put the blame on Elysium Gate. She wanted the entire World Universe to seek revenge with the Elysium Gate, and there would be chaos in their world!

The elites from the New World could then cross to their land to destroy the entire World Universe. What a great idea!

"Where are my mask and robe?" Yvette asked.

The Royal Guard immediately presented a black robe and a golden mask to her.

She had heard that Indomitable Darby would wear a golden mask each time he appeared. Even the Elysium Gate members had never seen his face.

Yvette tied her long hair and put on the masks. She looked at the Royal Guard Dragon and said, "How do I look? What about my voice? Do I sound like Indomitable Darby?"

Royal Guard Dragon knelt and said, "Princess, you looked exactly like Indomitable Darby now."

When she heard that, Yvette coughed lightly to correct him. "Please take note. I am Indomitable Darby now. You should address me as Sect Master. You don't want to give us away when we gather them here."

The Royal Guard Dragon was a smart person. He immediately replied, "Yes, Sect Master."

Yvette nodded and went to sit on the chair. She raised her arms. "Good. Bring forth the prisoners."

Yvette was excited. The Twelve Royal Guards left for the Wishing Star Tower.

Soon enough, they brought about 1000 people to Yvette.

Those people included Abbess Mother Serendipity from the Emei Sect, Sect Master Endless from the Shaolin Sect, and Sect Master Treasure from the Wudang Sect. Besides that, they also had Sect Master from the Beggars Sect, Sect Master from the Halls of Swords, and Master of Island Peach

Blossom. All of them looked extremely weak.

Not only were they poisoned by the Weak Poison, but their internal energy was also locked. They were just like any other ordinary person. Their hands and legs were cuffed with metal chains. None of them could escape.

Yvette was excited as she looked at every one of them. Then she spoke in a deep voice, "Greetings, Sect Masters. I regret meeting you this way. I am Indomitable Darby, and I would like to apologize to everyone."

Then she sat lazily on the chair; she looked arrogant. There was no respect for any of the elders there.

Everyone was furious as they stared at Yvette.

They were all elite members in the society, how could they be treated like an ordinary prisoner. That was way too humiliating!

"Indomitable Darby!"

Sect Master Treasure stepped forward and pointed at Yvette angrily. "We have done anything wrong. Why did you capture us?"

Chapter 524

Sect Master Treasure was emotional. "You had my respect when Elysium Gate got rid of the devilish gangs. It looks like that was an act. You are merely gathering them to threaten the community."

Sect Master Treasure started to cough; he was too angry.

Sect Master Treasure had believed that the group was not the Elysium Gate. Elysium Gate was an honest group, and they would never use the Weak Poison.

However, when he saw Yvette wore the golden mask, he was confident that they were from Elysium Gate!

Other than Indomitable Darby, no one else would wear a golden mask.

"Elysium Gate is pathetic!"

"You all are just rubbish and liars."

Everyone started to curse as Yvette smiled happily. The angrier they got, the happier Yvette was.

It appeared that her plan to capture the sect masters and blame it on Elysium Gate was a great idea, after

all. She still needed to humiliate them further.

Yvette looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity and smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, I have invited all of you here not to kill you. Why are you so emotional? This is just an invite for a drink."

She raised her hands. Men in black stepped forward with wine barrels. Then they pour a bowl of wine for each of their captives.

Once that was done, the men in black stepped aside.

What?

Why did they serve them wine?

Everyone was puzzled as they looked at each other. They were tied with chains on their hands and legs, and internal energy was sealed; that was not the way to invite someone for a drink.

Yvette raised her glass as she looked at everyone and smiled, "This is the first time that I, Indomitable Darby, meet all sect masters. Cheers."

Then she gulped her glass of wine.

Abbess Mother Serendipity and the rest stared at her coldly. None of them spoke or drank the wine.

Yvette smiled when she noticed that none of them moved.

Royal Dragon shouted, "Our Sect Master was polite

enough to invite you to drink, but none of you would accept it. What a disgrace! We'll just have to serve it to you then."

A group of female waitresses appeared and walked in front of the captives. They held the wine glass to force the wine down their throats.

The sect masters were famous and reputable people, but all of them were forced to drink the wine. Their internal energy was sealed, and their hands and legs were chained. They had no choice but to suffer the humiliation.

Retch!

The next moment, many of them started to vomit. They were not fed with wine! Those were saltwater!

All of the sect masters were furious. They were elites in the community, and they were forced to drink salt water!

Steven Simmons, the Beggars Sect's Sect Master, stared at Yvette and shouted, "Indomitable Darby, I don't have any dealings with you, and yet you humiliated me. Beggars Sect will treat Elysium Gate as our arch-enemy!"

It was just a little saltwater, and yet, he could not stand it?

Yvette smiled, but she did not say a word.

Abess Mother Serendipity's face was scarlet red. She scolded, "Indomitable Darby, if you don't kill me today, then I will kill every member from Elysium Gate."

Chapter 525

Yvette was not angry at all. She stood up slowly and said, "I have heard that Abbess Mother Serendipity had a strong character, and I've finally experienced it."

She stood in front of Abbess Mother Serendipity as she stared at her and said, "You have a beautiful face; you must be the dream of many men. How many boyfriends have you had?"

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity's face was scarlet red as she trembled in anger. "What are you saying?" How dare he flirt with her!

Yvette suddenly kissed Abbess Mother Serendipity on her cheeks.

Everyone was stunned. What had happened?

Did Indomitable Darby kiss Abbess Mother Serendipity?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was the Sect Master of the Emei Sect. How would he dare to kiss her?

That was way out of line!

Abbess Mother Serendipity was still in shock, and

she did not know how to react! What had happened? Indomitable Darby had dared to kiss her?

Abbess Mother Serendipity slowly came back to her senses. She stared angrily at Yvette and screamed, "Indomitable Darby, you bastard! I will kill you!"

As the Sect Master of the Emei Sect, Abbess Mother Serendipity had always viewed her purity as the utmost importance.

Yvette's kiss was like a blow of death to her.

When she noticed Abbess Mother Serendipity's anger, Yvette smiled cheekily and apologized. "Oh no, Abbess Mother Serendipity! You looked too alluring. I can't control myself; I'm so sorry."

Then Yvette smiled at her.

At that moment, Sect Master Endless from the Shaolin Sect sighed. He put his palms together and said to Yvette, "Sir, please take my advice and stop this. Don't continue down this wrong path."

Yvette looked innocently at him and asked, "Master, you are wrong. What is wrong with us inviting you all for a drink? Abbess Mother Serendipity is too alluring; hence I couldn't stop myself from kissing her. That was just a normal human reaction."

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious; she stared at Yvette, but she could not speak.

What an idiot!

Yvette laughed. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, you are so attractive. Why are you still single? Why don't I find you a husband and get you married immediately? What do you think?"

Everyone was furious when they heard that!

How horrible was that Indomitable Darby? He wanted to get a husband for Abbess Mother Serendipity?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was too angry, and she shouted, "Indomitable Darby, you bastard, just kill me if you want to! You don't have to humiliate me like this!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity had always been pure. How could he humiliate her in such a way?

Chapter 526

Yvette raised her glass to take a sip and smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, don't be angry. It is for your own good. All women need a man. Let me find you one. What about a grand matchmaking event?"

Yvette laughed happily. "Don't worry, Abbess Mother Serendipity. I will find you a handsome husband."

"You—" Abbess Mother Serendipity almost fainted from anger. She could not stand it anymore and shouted, "Indomitable Darby, I will kill you, you bastard!"

She raised her arms! However, she was easily restrained by one of the men in black beside her.

Yvette laughed.

'Yes, I want you to be angry. The angrier you are, the more you will hate the Elysium Gate,' Yvette thought.

Yvette was happy to see Abbess Mother Serendipity's angry face. She shouted, "Everyone, it would be the best thing to happen to you if you were to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity."

Then she raised the pitch of her voice and asked, "

Anyone here would like to volunteer to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity?"

Everyone kept their silence; they looked conflicted. No one dared to stand forward.

That must be a joke! It was Abbess Mother Serendipity! Who would dare to violate her name?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious, and she continued to shout, "Indomitable Darby, you bastard! Let me go! You're a coward who sealed my internal energy! What kind of man are you?"

Yvette smiled and argued, "Abbess Mother Serendipity, you are wrong. I never said I am a man. " Well, she was a lady.

Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lips so hard that it almost bled.

Yvette could not stop laughing as she shouted, "So? Is no one willing to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity? I have an idea. Agree to marry her, and you're free to go!"

Wow!

Everyone looked interested when they heard that. None of them wanted to stay captive any longer.

"Still, no one?" Yvette asked coldly. "If you are not willing to marry her, then you shall stay here

forever. I will only let the person willing to marry her go."

"I am willing."

A voice came from the crowd; it was from the Wudang Sect.

It was Master Treasure! Everyone looked at him in surprise.

Yvette was delighted as she waved her hands. "Master Treasure, you are willing to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity, is that right?"

"Yes, I do..."

Abbess Mother Serendipity exploded. "Master Treasure, the Emei Sect will treat the Wudang Sect as our enemy!"

Master Treasure was embarrassed.

'Abbess Mother Serendipity, please don't be so angry. Can't you see that I am trying to deceive them? Once I leave here, I will seek help from all sects to destroy the Elysium Gate!' Master Treasure thought.

Yvette happily returned to her seat and clapped her hands. "Great, we have a match! Come, let's arrange a wedding ceremony for Abbess Mother Serendipity and Master Treasure!"

At that moment, a few of the waitresses walked forward to force Abbess Mother Serendipity and Master Treasure to kneel.

"The first bow is for Heaven and Earth," Yvette said happily.

Sh*t!

Abbess Mother Serendipity's body trembled as she vomited blood! That was it. She would no longer be pure; her reputation was wrecked. Even though they might escape, everyone would know that she had a wedding ceremony with Master Treasure.

Her eyes were blood-red as she stared at Yvette; they were filled with anger! If her stare were capable of killing, Yvette would have been dead.

Yvette looked satisfied. She smiled at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, why are you staring at me? If I were you, I would be so happy for this day!"

Chapter 527

"The second bow is for the elderly, and thirdly, bow to each other!"

Yvette laughed happily. She took out her cell phone and recorded everything.

There were no cell phones in the New World. Yvette had never used a cell phone before she went to the World Universe. A smart girl like her picked up the technology immediately.

A few minutes later, the hilarious but grand wedding ceremony was completed.

Yvette looked at the Twelve Royal Guards and said, "That's it, let everyone go. Abbess Mother Serendipity and Master Treasure will go on their honeymoon now."

That should be enough torture for everyone. Everyone would hate the Elysium Gate by then. Since the objective had been met, it was time to let everyone go so that they would gather their forces to destroy the Elysium Gate!

"Yes, Sect Master! We shall release everyone," Royal Guard Tiger replied after he heard Yvette's order.

What?

'Release everyone? They captured everyone, just to humiliate us?' Everyone could not believe what had happened.

Master Treasure looked at Yvette and asked, "You are releasing us? I thought you said that you would only release the person willing to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity? Why are you releasing everyone?"

Master Treasure felt that he had been fooled.

If he had known about that earlier, he would not have volunteered himself. Not only was he fooled, but he had also offended Abbess Mother Serendipity!

Yvette smiled. "Why? I am releasing everyone. Are you not satisfied?"

Yvette ignored him. She took out her cell phone to admire the video she had taken earlier.

Master Treasure was furious, his body shook, and he held his fists tightly. He looked at Yvette in anger. If his internal energy had not been sealed, he would have killed Indomitable Darby."

'How dare he make a fool of the Six Sects!'

Royal Guard Dragon rushed everyone out. "Move it!

Do you enjoy being a fugitive? Hurry up, and I will lead you all down the hill."

Soon, Yvette was the only one left at the Wishing Star Tower. She felt so relieved.

She had humiliated all the sects and put the blame on Elysium Gate.

From then onward, the World Universe would be in great chaos. New World would then send some of their people to take over the World Universe.

Just as she got excited, Yvette suddenly furrowed her eyebrows. She felt the presence of intense energy behind her! She quickly turned; her whole body shook.

Someone stood quietly behind her, and that person wore a golden mask too.

It was the real Sect Master of Elysium Gate, Indomitable Darby—Darryl Darby.

Darryl was furious! He had witnessed the entire incident where that person humiliated the sect masters. How could that person impersonate him?

Darryl bit his lips and said coldly, "Who are you? Why do you impersonate me?"

Both Darryl and Yvette wore their masks, so they could not recognize each other.

"I—"

Yvette smiled. "Don't misunderstand me. I admired you very much. Hence I made a mask for myself."

At that moment, the Twelve Royal Guards were not there; they had left to send everyone down the hill. She was the only person there, so she had to delay him.

Darryl smiled. "Admire me? Do you take me for a fool? You have captured leaders of the Six Sects and put all the blame on me. Is this how you admire me? I will fight you until you kneel before me. Otherwise, I am not Indomitable Darby."

Chapter 528

Darryl immediately punched Yvette!

Yvette reacted quickly; she leapt and started to run away.

"Running away?" Darryl shouted coldly and went after her. He turned to the Four Warlords and shouted, "Zephyr, go down the hills now. Inform all the sects someone is pretending to be the Elysium Gate. We need to clarify this misunderstanding with them."

"Yes, Sir!" Zephyr and the rest replied.

Yvette had run for a few minutes, but the distance between Darryl and her had gotten closer. He would catch up with her soon!

However, Yvette was not worried; she smiled. The woods were in front of her. She had set some traps there. No one would be able to leave the woods alive. She dove into the woods without any hesitation.

Darryl stopped right outside the woods. He did not barge into the woods; he stood outside as he observed the place. Something was not right with the woods; there was a trap.

Yvette sighed in relief. She smiled at Darryl. "I have nothing to do with you, why are you chasing me?"

"Nothing to do with me?" Darryl laughed coldly. "You pretended to be me, abducted the elites and Sect Masters under the guise of Elysium Gate. You still dare to say that you did nothing wrong?"

Yvette replied, "You should thank me; Elysium Gate is now famous."

Darryl was annoyed. He did not want to waste any more time. "Remove your mask and get out of there. You have the guts to impersonate me, but don't dare to face me?"

Yvette laughed. "Why should I come out there? You can come here if you want."

She added, "You should be the one to remove your mask. You are Indomitable Darby, Elysium Gate's Sect Master. Are you too ashamed to reveal yourself?"

"You—"

Darryl was furious and speechless. Yvette continued to say, "I didn't expect that Indomitable Darby is a coward who would not even dare to enter the woods."

Yvette had set a trap in the woods; it was the Six

Energy Trap. A minister from the New World had taught her that, and it was incredible!

Yvette was very confident with her plan. Apart from herself, no one would be able to leave the woods.

The trap was a backup plan. If her plan to abduct the elites from the sects had failed, she would retreat and hide in the woods.

The abduction plan had gone well, but she was trapped because of Indomitable Darby.

After he observed the trap for about two minutes, Darryl nodded. That was the Six Energy Trap; the Bai Qi Formation scripture had recorded it. It was a moderate difficulty level trap, so it was not too difficult to break it.

Then, Darry stepped into the woods.

"How dare you enter here!" Yvette shouted. "I didn't expect Elysium Gate's Sect Master to be so stupid. Once you come in here, you can never leave. I shall leave you here then. I hope you'll enjoy this place forever."

Yvette started to run. Five right turns, three left turns, seven rows in front and nine rows behind...

Yvette used the secret code to get out of the woods. No one could leave if they did not know the code, especially not Indomitable Darby. He would never

be able to catch up to her.

Yvette was about to reach the exit when she suddenly saw a black shadow appear in front of her. She looked up and screamed!

Chapter 529

Darryl had managed to block her exit

"You—" Yvette bit her lips; she was in shock!

"Did you think that you could trap me with just a simple Six Energy Trap?" Darryl asked coldly.

Yvette was dumbstruck. How did he know about the trap? It was impossible!

Just as Yvette was deep in her thoughts, Darryl reached out and removed her golden mask! She did not expect him to do that!

Wow!

Darryl was immediately mesmerized by Yvette's beauty. Both of them were stunned.

Yvette? She was the one who impersonated him?

Yvette's beauty seized Darryl's attention. Her long hair was in a bun, and she wore a black robe. Even though her perfect body figure was covered, her beautiful features still captivated her.

Yvette felt ashamed and angry. She quickly reached out to pull Darryl's mask. She was stunned to see who was in front of her.

"Darryl! How could it be you?"

She trembled; she was still speechless. She had always thought that Elysium Gate's founder was someone great and famous!

She had never expected the person to be Darryl.

The woods were in complete silence. Both of them looked at each other, but they did not say a single word.

Both of them sighed.

After a few seconds, Darryl took a deep breath as he stared at Yvette. "Speak. Why do you impersonate me?"

During the Hexad School's gathering, Darryl thought that Yvette was a beautiful and smart lady. He had never thought she would be evil enough to capture all the elites in the community and pushed the blame onto the Elysium Gate!

Most importantly, who was Yvette? The Twelve Royal Guards were powerful people, so why would they follow her? Royal Guard Rat and Royal Guard Tiger were Martial Saints, how could they obey another's command?

"I am asking you again. Who are you, and why did you impersonate me?" Darryl asked coldly.

Yvette smiled. "Why should I tell you?"

"Stop talking nonsense. I am asking you again, are you going to tell me?" Darryl held his fists tightly as he stared at her!

Yvette was not afraid; she smiled at him. "What if I don't want to tell you?"

Yvette was still in shock when she found out that Darryl was Indomitable Darby. She could not stop looking at him.

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows. Zing! The Blood Drinking Sword appeared in Darryl's hands, and he pressed it against Yvette's neck. "I am asking you one last time; why did you impersonate me?!"

Intense energy surrounded Darryl.

Chapter 530

Yvette smiled when she saw the Blood Drinking Sword. She closed her eyes and said, "Darryl, you want to know who I am? I'd never tell you. Kill me if you want. But if you kill me, you'd never find out about my background, and my men will go after you to kill you."

Darryl bit his lips; he was dumbstruck. It was apparent she tried to be difficult.

"Kill me. Otherwise, let me go. Don't waste my time."
" Yvette opened her eyes and smiled.

Darryl took a deep breath and smiled at her. "I will not kill you. But I will make you wish you were dead."
"

Darryl removed his shirt and tore it into strips. Then he made a rope out of those strips. He carried Yvette and tied her tightly onto a tree.

"Darryl, what are you doing?" Yvette shouted angrily.

Darryl ignored her. He raised his hands, and Yvette felt the presence of intense energy. Then the trees at both sides broke into pieces.

Yvette shouted, "What are you doing? You have no

guts to kill me, and now you are releasing your anger on the trees?" Had he gone crazy?

Darry did not say a word. He raised his hands again, and a few more trees broke into pieces.

Suddenly, Yvette felt itchiness and heat all over her body. She was extremely itchy and hot!

"Darryl, what did you do to me?" Yvette shouted.

Darryl smiled at her. "I made some slight adjustments to your trap. This is a Six Energy trap, so it could also direct the heat from the ground toward people. One would feel extreme itch and pain."

"Don't you dare try to scare me!" Yvette started to worry, but she would not surrender. "I do not believe you. Do you really think that the Six Energy trap can be modified? Don't try to trick me."

When the minister taught her the Six Energy trap, he never mentioned any possible modifications. He also did not say anything about itchiness!

Darryl smiled and looked at her. He did not say anything; he simply waited.

At that moment, a sudden heat wave circulated the woods before it surrounded Yvette. Her whole body started to itch again!

Yvette started to laugh.

She felt as if many people had tickled her at the same time, and it made her break into laughter.

"It's very itchy, Darryl, stop it! Make it stop now!" Yvette could not stand the heat and itch all over her body. She felt as if every inch of her skin was itchy beyond description!

"Darryl, did you hear me? Make it stop!" Yvette started to stomp her feet. She could not stop laughing, too.

Darryl stood in front of her, so he could see that she was miserable. "Well? Are you going to talk? Why did you impersonate me?"

Chapter 531

Yvette's body could not help but tremble while she tried resisting the hot and ticklish feelings. She bit her lip tightly and refused to make a sound!

“Fine, let's see how long you can keep it up.” Darryl was in no rush as he leaped with a single jump onto a big tree and laid relaxingly on a branch.

Yvette felt worse as time passed under the circumstances, no one could endure such ticklish sensations for long.

Darryl closed his eyes and enjoyed Yvette's incessant laughter which was like music to his ears.

Yvette was covered in sweat after about a dozen seconds as she could not endure any longer and said, “Darryl, haha... Please stop the formation...”

Darryl was happy to hear Yvette's gentle tone but he still remained silent. This woman was stubborn and he had to properly torment her further. Darryl kept his eyes shut and whistled on the tree branch as though he did not hear a single thing.

Yvette's arrogant demeanor faded away and she felt utter despair upon seeing Darryl's actions. “Darryl, please stop the formation. Please, I'm begging you

...”

Yvette was unwilling to beg Darryl for mercy, but she really could not endure any longer! She was tormented to the point of being completely covered in sweat.

Yvette threw her dignity aside upon seeing Darryl was still silent and pleaded while stomping the grounds. “Darryl, the Indomitable Darby, Sect Master Darby! I’m begging you, please have mercy on me. I won’t do it again, please let me go...”

Yvette’s face turned red-hot like a fireball. As the prideful New World’s Princess Yvette, anyone who saw her had to bow down and greet her! She had never thought she would one day be begging mercy from a man!

Darryl lazily opened his eyes upon hearing Yvette’s words. “Tell me exactly who are you?”

“I’m the New World Princess...”

Darryl was stunned and looked at Yvette in disbelief upon hearing her words. He was rendered speechless for quite some time.

So Yvette was a princess! It was no wonder the Twelve Royal Guards listened to her commands!

Darryl was taken aback and could not help but asked, “Why did you impersonate me and abduct

those sects' elites?"

Yvette bit her lip with her fluttering eyelashes as she put on an expression as though she was wronged. "I just thought it's fun and imitated you out of my admiration for you. I think the Elysium Gate is very cool and that Indomitable Sect Master Darby is amazing..."

Yvette tried resisting the ticklish feelings while gently pleaded, "Sect Master Darby, I won't do it again. Please let me go..."

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows. "I can let you go, but you must come with me and properly explain this situation to the sects! You humiliated those elites and framed Elysium Gate for it. The Elysium Gate will become every martial artists' public enemy if this matter isn't explained properly."

"Alright, alright, I'll go okay!" Yvette bit her lip tightly as she was about to cry.

Darryl waved his hand and stopped the formation after Yvette agreed to the compromise.

At that moment, rapid footsteps could be heard coming from beyond the woods! A dozen figures swiftly flew into sight soon after!

It was the Twelve Royal Guards!

Yvette felt her spirits revitalized upon seeing them

and shouted, “Twelve Royal Guards, quickly seize Darryl! You have to capture him!”

Yvette was unspeakably angered and embarrassed at the moment!

She had surrendered for the time being just because she could no longer endure it. She would not let Darryl go now that the Twelve Royal Guards had arrived!

Yvette wanted to capture Darryl, forced him onto his knees, and begged her for mercy!

Chapter 532

Woosh.

The Twelve Royal Guards' gaze immediately locked onto Darryl as soon as Yvette finished her words and instantly rushed toward Darryl!

“Sh*t!” Darryl self-exclaimed as he immediately turned and ran!

Darryl could not afford to mess with these 12 people as 10 of them were Martial Marquises while two were Martial Saints!

Darryl would not be able to defeat them even if he fought to his death, therefore the best solution was to run.

Darryl could have sworn he had never run so fast in his life. Although he was fast, the two Martial Saints were faster!

The Royal Rat Guard instantly leaped up and blocked Darryl's path while his hands made a claw-shaped before immediately grasping toward Darryl's chest without any warning!

‘Damn, is this the power of a Martial Saint? It's only a simple grasp yet it's so terrifying!’ If Darryl

was caught, he would have been crippled if not dead!

Darryl also felt a suffocating sensation! He dared not face the Royal Rat Guard head-on so he retreated to dodge the attack.

At that moment, the Royal Ox Guard attacked Darryl from another direction with a punch!

This punch was extremely powerful and imposing!

Darryl had quickly reacted and dodged left, but alas he did not fully make it and was grazed by the punch. Just a mere graze had caused Darryl to spit out blood!

“Ah!” Darryl’s mind went blank as he lost control of his body and flew a dozen meters away. He landed heavily on the ground before spitting out even more blood!

At that moment, the Twelve Royal Guards had surrounded Darryl who was in immense pain and instantly felt hopeless!

‘This is the end, am I going to be captured? Yvette will surely torture me to death if I’m caught,’ thought Darryl.

“Come quietly,” said the Royal Rat Guard coldly as he reached out to grab Darryl!

Whoosh!

The sounds of two explosive dashes could be heard at that crucial moment and Darryl instinctively looked toward the sound's direction and saw two figures swiftly flying toward him!

It was a man and a woman!

The slender man with a skinny face had a blue dragon tattoo on his neck!

While the woman was wearing a dark red dress on her slim and graceful figure. They were part of Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Four Guardian Kings—the Azure Dragon and Vermilion Peafowl!

‘What are they doing here? Aren't they supposed to be on Elysian Island?’ Darryl was puzzled.

“Elder Master, we're here to save you!” Azure Dragon shouted before flicking his wrist and threw a palm strike at the Royal Rat Guard!

Boom! The Royal Rat Guard and Azure Dragon both staggered back as the attack landed with none having an advantage over the other!

At the same time, Vermilion Peafowl rushed toward Darryl and held him in her arms. Her enchanting face was filled with unease and worry. “Elder Master, are you alright? Are you injured?”

Gulp.

At that moment, Darryl felt as if his organs had been completely rearranged. While enduring the pain, he could smell Vermilion Peafowl's fragrance as she held him against her elegant body. Darryl could not help but quietly swallowed his saliva and smiled. "I'm fine. I won't die."

The Vermilion Peafowl nodded upon hearing Darryl's words, held onto him, and flew midair!

Meanwhile, Azure Dragon was fighting and retreating at the same time before eventually leaving the area.

The two Guardian Kings took Darryl a dozen kilometers and finally landed on a boat.

"Elder Master, are you sure your injuries aren't serious?" Azure Dragon could not help but ask while standing on the deck when he noticed there was blood on the corner of Darryl's mouth.

Darryl waved his hand. "I'm alright, I'm alright. Why did both of you suddenly appear? Aren't you supposed to be on Elysian Island?"

Both Guardian Kings glanced at each other before Vermilion Peafowl gently said, "Elder Master, the Cult Mistress specifically sent us and asked for your return to Elysian Island. We finally found you after searching for so long at Donghai City."

“Why is the Cult Mistress looking for me?” Darryl mumbled.

‘Could it be she misses me after not meeting for so long?’ Darryl internally laughed.

“I don’t know why the Cult Mistress is looking for you either,” said the Vermilion Peafowl gently as she channeled her internal energy to move the boat toward Elysian Island.

Chapter 533

Darryl nodded and did not ask further.

They arrived at Elysian Island two hours later.

It was late autumn, but Elysian Island was like a hidden paradise as its pleasant vibrantly colored exotic seaside plants could still be observed from a distance.

The Vermilion Peafowl knocked on the Cult Mistress's room door and respectfully announced, "Mistress, Darryl is here."

Monica's gentle voice came from the room as the Vermilion Peafowl finished her words. "Alright, let Darryl come in alone. Azure Dragon and Vermilion Peafowl, you may excuse yourselves."

"Yes, Mistress," replied Vermilion Peafowl as she turned and left.

Darryl eventually opened the door and went in after seeing both of them had walked far away.

Gulp.

Darryl could not help but swallow his saliva upon seeing the scene in front of him as he entered the room.

Monica wore a purple nightgown at that moment. Darryl found it hard to take his eyes off her sexy curves. The light makeup on her face only further enhanced her immeasurable beauty!

The Cult Mistress was exceptionally alluring to Darryl after not seeing her for a while.

“Mistress, you suddenly called me back out. Is it because you missed me?” Darryl said with a grin. He was getting bolder after his two previous intimate contacts with the Cult Mistress.

Monica blushed and flirtatiously rolled her eyes. “Darryl, I’m still the Cult Mistress. You’re becoming more presumptuous with such disrespect to your superiors.”

Darryl was truly becoming more improper.

“Alright, alright. I shall obey your commands,” Darryl’s smile faded away, and could not help but asked, “so why are you looking for me?”

Monica was the most rational woman that Darryl knew and she would not seek him without any reason.

Monica humphed as she stood up from the bed and walked to Darryl’s side before softly saying, “I want to ask you. If I’ve not sent someone to look for you, will you take the initiative to visit me?”

Darryl laughed upon hearing Monica's tone and gave her a tight hug.

"I've been through a lot during the past few days. I almost died at the Six Sects' hands and truly didn't have time to come. Don't be mad at me, Mistress," whispered Darryl softly into Monica's ears.

Darryl had not lied. Abbess Mother Serendipity's attack earlier caused him to lose his powers and he needed a considerable effort to recover from his injuries. He later on even discovered that Yvette was impersonating himself and this series of events kept Darryl busy. There was no time for his return back to Elysian Island.

Darryl would truly have visited the Cult Mistress if he had not been so busy. Strictly speaking, the Cult Mistress was the first woman he had been with after all.

Monica was concurrently shy and happy from Darryl's sudden hug, but she pushed him away and softly said, "I-I'm not mad at you... I just miss you a lot..."

Monica completely flushed upon finishing her own words!

How could she say such embarrassing things as the high and mighty Cult Mistress? However, she could not help but let her proud demeanor down with

Darryl around.

Darryl wrapped his arms around the Cult Mistress's waist and hugged her tightly again upon hearing those words!

"Ah..." Monica's whole body fell into Darryl's arms from the inertia as she exclaimed.

"What's wrong? Did I hugged you too tightly and hurt you?" Darryl softly asked.

"I-I'm fine..." Monica tightly bit her lip until it was about to bleed. "But if you are to hug me with such force, I-I'm afraid you'll hurt the child inside me..."

What!?

At that moment, Darryl felt a buzzing in his head!

The child inside Monica!?

This...

"It's our child," said Monica with a faint blushing smile. ①

Chapter 534

“Our child... It’s really true?” Darryl was pleasantly surprised and could not express himself through words. He was suddenly enveloped in happiness!

“It’s true, you can feel for yourself if you don’t believe me.” Monica blushed as she took Darryl’s hand and placed it on her abdomen.

Monica felt something was off for quite some time since it had been a while since her last period. She finally took a pregnancy test and it turned out she was indeed pregnant.

Monica had been married to the Cult Master for so many years but they did not consummate their marriage and the only person she had relations with was Darryl. It could be said that Darryl was the first and only man that she had ever been with.

Monica recently missed Darryl a lot which was why she sent the two Guardian Kings to seek him out.

Darryl’s hand was currently on the Cult Mistress’s abdomen and Darryl’s entire body trembled at that moment,!

Darryl’s Martial Marquis rank allowed him to clearly feel a faint lifeforce within Monica’s

abdomen. He could still feel it despite how faint it was.

Monica was really pregnant!

Darryl was thrilled beyond measure as he held onto Monica's hand. "Am... Am I about to become a father?"

Monica closed her eyes and smiled as her head rested on Darryl's shoulder. "Yes, you're going to be a father..."

Darryl was extremely excited and tightly hugged Monica while his entire body trembled from the excitement! Both of them continued to remain silent as they enjoyed each other's warmth at that moment.

After quite some time, Darryl took a deep breath and suddenly pulled Monica's hand as he headed toward the door!

"What... What are you doing?" Monica gently asked.

Darryl tenderly looked at Monica and said, "You're with my child. Why're we still staying here? I'm leaving Elysian Island with you."

Monica exclaimed, "Nonsense! Darryl, don't be stupid. Where will we even go if I leave with you? Grandmaster Heaven Cult disciples are everywhere. They'll very quickly find us and we'll have nowhere

to run after that!”

Darryl was nervous upon hearing her words. “What should we do then? You can hide it for now but it’ll be impossible to hide your bulging belly a few months later!”

The Cult Master would surely question it when Monica’s belly becomes big. When the truth about Monica’s pregnancy is revealed, she would be in grave danger.

At that moment, Monica softly said, “Don’t worry, I’ve already thought of a plan.”

She gently sighed and continued, “Darryl, I need to mention another matter before telling you the plan.”

Monica paused for a moment and continued, “According to reliable sources, the New World is very ambitious and might perhaps soon invade our World Universe. The New World Emperor sent an envoy half a month ago to convince Grandmaster Heaven Cult to pledge allegiance to the New World.”

Darryl could not help but ask, “What did the Cult Master say? Is he pledging or not?”

Monica nodded her head. “The Cult Master had agreed to pledge his allegiance.”

What?

Darryl was stunned. How could the Cult Master agree to that!? Would it not be traitorous to pledge allegiance to the New World!?

Monica continued, “The New World’s envoy said that so long Grandmaster Heaven Cult willingly pledges our allegiance, the New World Emperor would bestow the Prime Minister title to him once he ruled over the World Universe. The Cult Master will be second only to the Emperor while being above all others! Grandmaster Heaven Cult will also become the Official Guardian Cult.”

Chapter 535

Darryl could not help but laugh upon hearing Monica's words.

'Damn, the New World willingly put in so much effort to win over the Grandmaster Heaven Cult,' thought Darryl.

Monica was a little angry and bit her lip. "I'm thoroughly disappointed at the Cult Master regarding this matter. Even though Grandmaster Heaven Cult doesn't have a good reputation, at least we should have a spine! So what if we become the Official Guardian Cult? If our world falls to the New World's occupation, we would just be living under someone else's control! A man shouldn't back down to adversity. How could the Cult Master willingly become the New World's lackey? I'm really disappointed with him."

Darryl was touched by Monica's words.

He never expected such a delicate woman like Monica would have such integrity!

Monica laughed and gently said, "That's why I don't want to stay at Elysian Island anymore. I don't want to be a traitor alongside the Grandmaster

Heaven Cult. I wanted to leave even if I didn't have your child. However, the Cult Master will surely be looking for me once I leave, therefore I fostered a plan.”

Monica sat on the chair and gently took a sip of tea. “Half a month later, the New World Emperor will send another envoy to discuss how to subdue the World Universe with our Cult Master. A banquet will definitely be held on Elysian Island to celebrate this occasion. I'll find an opportunity during that time to set the entire backyard on fire. Every disciple on Elysian Island will have been too drunk to put out that night's fire.”

Monica placed the teacup down and softly said, “I'll leave at that moment's opportunity, and by the time the Cult Master has sobered, he'll surely assume I've been burnt into ashes and won't come looking for me.”

Damn.

Darryl was impressed but a little worried about her plan. “Isn't this too dangerous?”

However, it had to be said the Cult Mistress was rather resourceful.

Monica gently opened her lips. “I'll do it even if it's dangerous. I've to leave this place as I don't want to become a traitor to the World Universe nor do I

want to continue staying on this island, but the main reason is that I want to safely deliver our child.”

At that moment, Monica smiled affectionately and rubbed her belly.

Darryl did not say another word and nodded. “Alright, I’ll have a boat to pick you up at that time.”

“Okay,” said Monica softly before she unexpectedly blushed, “Darryl, I belong to you from now onward. You... You can have many wives, b-but you can’t abandon me! If you don’t want me anymore then I’ll ...”

Monica’s voice became softer as she spoke and eventually became inaudible. Her flushed expression was extremely alluring and pulled at Darryl’s heartstrings.

Darryl looked at Monica with a grin and jokingly asked, “What will you do?”

The Cult Mistress’s manner was truly adoring.

Monica adorably said, “If you don’t want me anymore I’ll take our son and jump off a cliff.”

Monica smirked with immense fondness while saying that.

Darryl laughed and teased Monica, “How would you

know it's a boy? What if it's a girl?"

"I hate you, but that's not the point." Monica humphed as she slowly stood up and walked to the bedside before ordering Darryl, "Come and sleep with me."

Monica finished her words, laid on the bed, and continued, "I'll tell you another huge secret."

Chapter 536

“What secret?” Darryl was suddenly intrigued and sat by the bed as he stroked the Cult Mistress’s hair.

Monica faintly laughed and flirtatiously said, “Turn off the lights and come under the sheets, then we’ll talk.”

“Uh...” Darryl swallowed his saliva, took off his clothes, and turned off the lights before going under the sheets.

“So what’s the secret?” Darryl asked softly in the dark with his curiosity fully aroused.

Monica gently held Darryl’s hand under the sheets and said, “I heard the Kunlun Sect has secretly submitted to the New World.”

What?

Kunlun Sect already submitted to the New World!?

Darryl sighed. It would cause a great uproar in the martial arts world if this secret was revealed.

Kunlun Sect was one of the Six Orthodox Sects spanning over a thousand years from their First Sect Master and having more than a dozen generations of Sect Masters until recent times!

They were an honorable sect that was widely revered in the martial arts world.

Never had Darryl thought the Kunlun Sect would secretly submit to the New World.

Monica chuckled and continued, “Kunlun Sect’s Sect Master submitted because the New World Emperor gave him a secret manual called the Dark Method.”

“The Dark Method?”

Darryl quietly whispered the name to himself. It sounded rather powerful.

Monica said, “This Dark Method is an evil technique that’s forbidden to cultivate by the martial arts world a long time ago. It’s said that to properly cultivate this technique, one would have to absorb a woman’s spirit energy every day! A woman who has her spirit energy absorbed won’t be able to live for over a day. This evil technique has been lost for many years. I never thought it’d emerge again. I’m afraid to even imagine how many women will die after having their spirit energy absorbed.”

‘This technique is too insidious as it needs to absorb a woman’s spirit energy every day. Doesn’t that mean a woman will be sacrificed daily for Kunlun Sect’s Sect Master?’

Darryl sighed again.

The dignified Kunlun Sect's Sect Master deserved much ridicule for cultivating an evil secret manual and at the same time becoming a traitor to the World Universe.

Monica implored, "Darryl, keep the Kunlun Sect's betrayal matter to yourself. You must not let anyone know as only the Cult Master and I know about this matter in the entire World Universe. The New World Emperor would immediately suspect me if this information leaked out."

Monica then worriedly said, "Our main priority now is to find a way for me to safely leave Elysian Island. We can't create any more problems."

Darryl nodded. "Don't worry, Mistress. I won't mention this matter to anyone..."

Before Darryl finished his words, the Cult Mistress had already thrown herself into his arms and quickly followed up with a kiss.

...

Kunlun Sect.

One of the Six Sects was located on the summit of the Kunlun Mountains.

At that moment, Sect Master Leroy Henderson sat cross-legged at Kunlun Sect's main hall as he

concentrated on cultivating the Dark Method!

Leroy treasured the secret manual ever since receiving it and studied it every day!

This secret manual was truly amazing, Leroy's power has been increasing after cultivation! However, there was a drawback to this secret manual. Leroy had to absorb a woman's spirit energy daily! Otherwise, he would die from intoxication.

Hum!

Leroy suddenly opened his eyes as his face turned pale! He seemed to be in pain as it was about time to absorb another woman's spirit energy!

“Master, hang on. I'm coming!”

Chapter 537

At that moment, a disciple hastily walked in with a tightly tied up young lady behind him.

“What do you want? Why did you capture me?” The lady was so terrified her entire body trembled. She was a college student abducted when visiting Kunlun Mountain over the weekends.

Leroy walked toward her with a grin, slowly raised his right hand, and placed it on the lady’s head!

Hum!

The lady’s mind instantly went blank! She could feel her body’s energies continuously being drained!

Tsk tsk!

The lady collapsed onto the ground within a second with her face turned pale as if she had been emptied!

Meanwhile, Leroy’s pale face returned to normal after absorbing the lady’s spirit energy.

The disciple stood in shock and excitement before he smilingly said, “Congratulations Master, your ability has improved!”

The disciple felt that his master’s powers were

stronger than before.

Leroy gently let out his breath and slyly grinned. The Dark Method was truly amazing. It allowed Leroy to ascend from a Level One Martial Saint to a Level Three Martial Saint within just a month!

At that moment, the disciple cautiously said, “Master, do we kill this woman?”

Leroy glanced at the lady, shook his head, and apathetically said, “No need. Just tie her up and let her perish on her own. We don’t kill innocents as members of Kunlun Sect.” ①

Any woman having their spirit energy absorbed by Leroy would not be able to live past a day. She could not escape death even without their interference.

The disciple nodded and said, “Master, there’s one more thing. Abbess Mother Serendipity sent word that the Elysium Gate had captured the various sects’ elites yesterday and brought them to the Wishing Star Tower to brutally humiliate them. Abbess Mother Serendipity is extremely angered and wants to gather all the sects together to eliminate the Elysium Gate! Master, are we going?”

Leroy nodded and said, “We must go. Kunlun Sect has submitted to the New World. We must help them unite the martial arts world of course! The Elysium Gate is developing really fast. It’ll be good

to eliminate them! Immediately gather the disciples. We're going to Donghai City."

"Yes, Master!" replied the disciple who quickly left.

A joyful voice came from the main hall's entrance just as the disciple had left. "Dad, are you going to Donghai City? I wanna go too!"

A slender figure of roughly 18 years old lively scampered into the hall.

It was none other than Leroy's daughter, Lydia.

Leroy's face was filled with tenderness upon seeing his daughter. "Lydia, I'm going to Donghai City for serious matters. Not for fun."

Lydia was really precious to Leroy and he greatly coddled her.

Lydia walked toward Leroy, held onto his arm upon hearing his words, and shook it while saying, "Dad, I really wanna go... I heard that Donghai City is really fun. There's the sea, the beach..."

"Alright, alright, I'll bring you there..." Leroy said helplessly as he relented after seeing his daughter acting cute.

After an hour, Leroy along with 2,000 Kunlun Sect elite disciples headed toward Donghai City's Dragon Raising Lake. Abbess Mother Serendipity had

requested them to wait for her at Dragon Raising Lake.

...

Donghai City, Young residence.

Yvonne was sitting on the living room sofa and watching television which showed a popular variety show but she paid no attention to it.

Yvonne had lost contact with Darryl ever since the wedding incident. It seems as though she had lost her spirit, was uninterested in whatever she did, and had been locking herself at home the whole time.

Chapter 538

Kingston walked over at that moment and sighed when he saw his daughter's depressed state before consoling her. "Yvonne, are you still thinking about Darryl? Everyone despises him right now while the Six Sects and every prominent family are thinking of ways to get rid of him. A man like him can no longer redeem himself, why are you still hung up on him? On top of that, he's colluding with the Eternal Life Palace Sect which in itself is an unforgivable act!"

Yvonne chuckled and did not say a word. Darryl was the best man in the entire world in her opinion! Yvonne would not believe any slander against him regardless of who said it.

Kingston was worried to see his daughter remaining silent. "Yvonne, don't think about Darryl anymore. The weather is fine today, let's go for a walk."

Yvonne remained silent as she shook her head.

Kingston started to feel anxious. "My beloved daughter, will you go if I beg you!?"

Yvonne could not continue to stay cooped up at

home. Otherwise, she would fall sick sooner or later!

“I’m begging you, the weather is pretty good today. I’ll bring you to the beach...” said Kingston with an expectant face.

Sigh.

Yvonne felt helpless and plainly said, “Alright, Dad. You don’t have to say anymore. I’ll go change my clothes, okay?”

“Sure, sure!” Kingston was extremely happy with his daughter’s agreement. After so many days, his daughter was finally willing to leave the house and relax...

Three hours later, at Donghai City’s Dragon Raising Lake.

Kingston and Yvonne were walking along the beach at Dragon Raising Lake.

Yvonne was familiar with Dragon Raising Lake as Donghai City’s prominent families had a trip here a few months ago. Kent had someone impersonate a shark during that time which unexpectedly attracted a real shark.

It was late autumn but the scenery here was still as mesmerizing with Gallery Twenty as still beautiful as ever and made everyone reluctant to leave.

“My daughter...”

Kingston felt relaxed when he saw the beautiful scenery before him and smilingly said to Yvonne, “Look at how beautiful the view is. You’ll feel much better after coming out for a walk. Don’t always stay cooped up at home.”

Yvonne forced a smile and did not say a word.

Kingston was about to speak but his cellphone suddenly rang. He took out his phone and saw the call was from an antique dealer.

It was unclear what the person on the other side said, but Kingston was really excited and replied, “What? Alright, I’ll go there right now!”

He hung up the phone after finishing his words and looked toward Yvonne. “My daughter, I’ve to go to Nanyang City. There’s a set of antiques there which is said to be jade wares from the Han Dynasty Palace! I’ve to go and take a look as we’ll be earning a lot again if this business is a success!”

Kingston laughed and continued, “Stay here, relax, and enjoy yourself.”

Kingston hurriedly left after finishing his words.

Yvonne remained indifferent upon seeing her father leaving. She slowly walked along the seaside and could not help but thought of Darryl.

She recalled being chased by a shark during the last

trip. The situation was dangerous yet Darryl disregarded his own safety to stand in front of Yvonne and fight off the shark.

The situation at that moment was really perilous and Yvonne would have been dead were it not for Darryl.

Yvonne still remembered the scene clearly when Darryl killed the shark and was covered in blood! A certain warmth could be felt in her heart as she recalled these moments. However, she still showed a sorrowful expression.

‘Darryl, I’m at Dragon Raising Lake again but where are you...’ Yvonne thought.

“Haha!”

It was at that moment Yvonne heard a laugh from behind her!

Yvonne looked toward the sound’s direction and saw a man and woman pair not far away. They slowly walked toward Yvonne’s direction while chattering and laughing.

This man and woman were none other than Abbess Mother Serendipity and Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy! They were discussing how to eliminate Elysium Gate.

Yvonne was annoyed to see these two people.

Chapter 539

Abbess Mother Serendipity had a thing against Darryl everywhere she went!

Abbess Mother Serendipity's attack during the wedding caused Darryl to lose his power and Yvonne felt a particular distaste for her such that Yvonne did not even want to greet her! At that moment, Yvonne hid behind a huge boulder to avoid Abbess Mother Serendipity.

“Sect Master Henderson, the Elysium Gate is really despicable!” Abbess Mother Serendipity had not seen Yvonne and said to Leroy.

“Abbess Mother Serendipity, don't worry. The Kunlun Sect will assist you in eliminating Elysium Gate!” Leroy said with a smile. “Oh right, when Indomitable Darby captured the various sect's elites, how did he humiliate all of you?”

Abbess Mother Serendipity tightly clenched her fists as she could not help but recalled that day's incident. She could not believe that Indomitable Darby forced herself to get married to Master Leonard!

It was such a huge humiliation!

Abbess Mother Serendipity had traveled across places and had never suffered such humiliation. It was the very reason she had to eliminate Elysium Gate! 1

Abbess Mother Serendipity was angry but felt it was inappropriate to voice it out and simply sighed. "Let's not talk about this."

"Alright, alright, I won't bring it up anymore..." Leroy promptly replied.

"I'll never forgive those two Darbys!" Abbess Mother Serendipity exclaimed to herself.

Leroy was stunned. "Those two Darbys? Besides Indomitable Darby, there was another Darby that made you unhappy?"

Sigh...

Abbess Mother Serendipity let out a long sigh and said, "Sect Master Henderson, you may not be aware of this but besides Indomitable Darby, there's another Darryl Darby who's colluding with the Eternal Life Palace Sect. He also violated his sister-in-law and angered his grandfather to death. Everyone despises him, and his actions are unforgivable!"

Leroy furrowed his eyebrows and said, "Darryl Darby? I've heard he's a talented man who defeated

everyone during the Lion Slaughtering Conference.”

“What if he’s talented? He deserves death for committing such immoral acts!” Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly.

Leroy laughed. “Abbess Mother Serendipity, why don’t you just kill him and be done with it? You’re helping the world by removing such a foul man.”

Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lip and felt helpless upon hearing his words. “Sect Master Henderson, this Darryl is a lucky man. I’ve tried killing him a few times before but were unsuccessful.”

“Abbess Mother Serendipity, I’ll capture him for you to deal with yourself since you hate him so much!” Leroy volunteered. He felt guilty after joining the New World which was the reason he tried maintaining good relations with the various sects on top of avoiding their suspicions.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was thrilled and could not help but said, “Yes, that would be great! I’ll be waiting for your good news in that case!”

It would be a joyous occasion for Abbess Mother Serendipity if she could rid Darryl the scum! Old Master Darby would be able to rest in peace once Darryl was dead.

Leroy smirked and said, “Please wait here, I’ll go

capture Darryl right now.”

...

At that moment, Yvonne who was still hiding behind the boulder felt extremely anxious upon hearing the conversation between those two!

‘Leroy is going to capture Darryl! I can’t let anything happen to Darryl again!’ Yvonne thought.

Yvonne quickly took out her phone and called Darryl.

She called him a few times but it seemed that Darryl’s phone was off.

Why was the call not getting through! Yvonne was about to cry from anxiety! She had been unable to reach Darryl’s phone ever since that wedding incident!

Yvonne was unaware of her previous attempts to reach Darryl’s phone failed because he was trapped in the Peach Blossom Forest.

However, the failure this time was because Darryl’s phone had run out of battery when spending the night at Elysian Island.

Chapter 540

At the coast of Donghai City.

A boat slowly approached the shores with Darryl getting out of the cabin who had only arrived at Donghai City from Elysian Island.

Darryl felt refreshed after discovering such a joyous matter.

Darryl was thrilled to know Monica was pregnant. He was invigorated after hugging the Cult Mistress to sleep last night.

Darryl stood on the boat with a sack full of herbs he harvested earlier from Elysian Island in hand.

Darryl felt hungry once he disembarked as he had not eaten since the previous night.

He looked around, saw a nearby noodle shop, and immediately walked over from his sudden thoughts of eating noodles.

“A bowl of noodles please,” said Darryl once he was seated at the noodle shop.

“Sure, please wait a moment,” said the shop owner with a smile.

Darryl took out his phone to make a mobile

payment but soon realized that his phone had run out of battery.

He had no choice but to borrow the owner's charger and charged his phone as he ate.

As Darryl was enjoying his meal, he noticed four customers were sitting at a nearby table who wore similar uniforms with a sword on their hip. They were Kunlun Sect disciples.

Those four disciples took out their phones and kept taking photos of Darryl.

'Are these motherf*cker crazy?'

Darryl stared at them and rudely said, "What are you taking my pictures for? I'm not a celebrity."

Those four disciples remained silent as they placed their phones down and continued eating.

Darryl did not think much of it and continued eating as well.

Darryl finished his meal after 15 minutes and unplugged his phone from the charger to pay the bill, but heard a loud yell coming from the entrance before he could even turn on his phone!

"Darryl Darby!"

Darryl turned toward the voice's direction and saw over 30 men quickly walking toward the shop with

Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy leading them. He has an unpleasant aura and a mean look on his face!

Leroy had promised Abbess Mother Serendipity he would capture Darryl for her to personally deal with him, thus Kunlun Sect disciples had been looking for Darryl all over the city. Those disciples who were eating nearby hurriedly contacted the Sect Master when they saw Darryl.

“Come with me, Abbess Mother Serendipity wants to see you!” Leroy coldly snorted as he suddenly reached out to grab Darryl!

‘Oh shit, Level Three Master Saint!?’

Darryl’s mind was abuzz as he instinctively ran for the door to escape!

“Trying to run?”

Leroy sneered as he suddenly sped toward Darryl! He instantly caught up to Darryl and struck Darryl’s back with his palm.

Boom!

A muffled sound was heard and Darryl felt as though his entire body was about to shatter before he vomited blood. He flew over a dozen meters before smashing into a telephone pole and heavily fell onto the ground.

Darryl laid on the ground and gritted his teeth

while trying to stand back up. However, Leroy's attack was too powerful and had dispersed Darryl's internal energy! He would need at least half an hour to recover!

Leroy chuckled and knocked Darryl out with another palm strike before speaking to the disciples behind him, "Take him away."

A few Kunlun disciples quickly went forward and tied Darryl up upon hearing Leroy's orders before hastily followed Leroy and left.

Chapter 541

Dragon Raising Lake.

Leroy walked beside the sea with his disciples following behind as they dragged Darryl's unconscious body along before stumbling upon Jean a moment later.

Leroy chuckled and said, "Jean, where's Abbess Mother Serendipity? Tell her I've captured Darryl."

Jean glanced at Darryl and was instantly happy!

'Kunlun Sect Master is truly reliable! He really did as he said and captured Darryl!' Jean silently praised.

Jean replied, "Sect Master Henderson, my master is still cultivating in her room. It'll take about another hour before she's done."

"Alright!" Leroy said as he nodded his head. He then ordered the disciples behind him, "Go, lock Darryl up in the basement. Let Abbess Mother Serendipity personally deal with him once she's finished her cultivation."

"Yes, Master!" replied the disciples hurriedly as they scrambled to carry Darryl and locked him up in the basement.

Half an hour later.

Darryl regained his consciousness.

Darryl felt his entire body aching the moment he opened his eyes.

‘Motherf*cker, this idiotic Leroy is too brutal,’ thought Darryl.

Darryl tried to stand but realized his hands and feet were tightly tied up. There was no way for him to move!

Darryl looked around and noticed he was in a cold and damp basement with no windows. There was only a single metal door connecting the room to the world outside.

Darryl’s heart sank as he recalled Leroy mentioning he captured Darryl for Abbess Mother Serendipity. It would be impossible for Darryl to escape death once she was here!

What was Darryl going to do! He was so anxious his head was covered in sweat. At that moment, he suddenly heard very light footsteps coming from outside the door!

Creak...

A few seconds later, a small gap quietly opened on the metal door and a slender figure entered the

room.

Darryl felt hopeless as he thought it was Abbess Mother Serendipity who had entered. However, he was immediately surprised and thrilled upon looking closer!

It was Yvonne!

It was really Yvonne! During the day, she heard that Kunlun Sect Master wanted to capture Darryl, so she had been waiting at Dragon Raising Lake the whole time.

Darryl was thrilled the moment he saw Yvonne! Never had he expected to meet Yvonne after being tied up at such a horrible place!

Although they had not met for a long time, Yvonne was still as alluring as ever. However, she had lost a lot of weight and looked pitiful.

“Yvonne, what are you doing here!?” Darryl could not help but ask.

“Don’t ask for now...” Yvonne was anxious and quickly walked toward Darryl before untying the ropes. Her beautiful face showed a painful expression as she softly asked, “Darryl, are you alright? Are you hurt?”

Yvonne held her hands against Darryl’s face while trying to check if he was injured as she spoke.

“Yvonne... I’m fine...” Darryl felt a lump in his throat as he tried to hold back his tears.

Yvonne was really skinny now. How could she lose so much weight, only Heaven knows what she had been through during this time!

At that moment, Yvonne could not resist throwing herself into Darryl’s arms and cried, “I thought I’ll never see you again... I miss you so much...”

Yvonne thought about Darryl day and night, hoping she would be able to see him once again. The yearning she kept inside turned into tears the moment she saw him!

“Alright, alright...” Darryl hugged her tightly as he felt guilty.

However, Yvonne’s cries intensified as she could not hold back her tears. “Where have you been these days? Why didn’t you contact me? Do you know how much I miss you? I miss you a lot!”

Yvonne formed a fist and gently hit Darryl’s chest. “I’m unable to eat or sleep for the past few days. I can only think of you, but I couldn’t even find you! Do you know all these? I’ll be satisfied even if you sent me a message just telling me how you are doing, but you didn’t even send me a single message! I hate you. I hate you so much, Darryl!”

Chapter 542

Darryl felt immense guilt upon hearing Yvonne's words.

"I'm so sorry..."

Darryl wiped the tears off Yvonne's face with his heart badly aching. "Yvonne, I'm in the wrong. It's all my fault. I'm a dumb pig so don't be mad at an idiot like me. Don't be mad, okay?"

Darryl then pulled a pig face and whimpered.

Yvonne's tears turned into laughter from Darryl's actions as she gently hit him on the chest again. "Alright, I'm not angry anymore. Stand up, we have to leave this place quickly before the Kunlun disciples notice your absence."

Darryl nodded his head and clenched his fists.

'As the Kunlun Sect Master, I can't believe this f*cking Leroy would raise his hands against me! I didn't even offend him! The Cult Mistress also mentions that Leroy has become the New World's lackey. Such a f*cking vile feller!' Darryl angrily scolded Leroy in his mind before leaving the basement.

Darryl held onto Yvonne's hand and quickly ran

once they were outside. The area around Dragon Raising Lake was huge and it would take about half an hour to leave this place.

However, Darryl suddenly stopped as they just started running!

He felt a strong internal energy wave coursing through the air and instinctively looked forward before he was immediately frightened!

Darryl saw a man quietly standing and blocking the path forward not far from where he was.

The man wore a robe and stood there firmly like a mountain! It was the Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy!

Leroy was cultivating the Dark Method in a nearby room and had extraordinary hearing from being a Level Three Martial Saint!

Leroy had heard a strange noise when Darryl escaped from the basement, thus he came to investigate.

“Tsk tsk tsk. Wow, Darryl. I can’t believe someone would risk their lives to save a scum like you?”

Leroy said with a grin. His voice was not loud, but it was enough to give Darryl goosebumps!

‘This is it... This is the end! There is escaping now.’

Darryl’s mind was abuzz but he refused to yield and

stepped forward before scolding, “Leroy, I’ve no quarrel with you, so why did you capture me? You called me scum, but why don’t you ask yourself who’s the real scum!?”

‘I can’t believe the New World’s f*cking lackey would have the guts to call another person a scum,’ thought Darryl.

Leroy did not say a word and simply grinned. He immediately rushed toward Darryl with his fist outstretched the next moment! He was really fast!

A Level Three Martial Saint’s punch was really fast! Darryl couldn’t dodge against such speeds!

Darryl was only a Level One Martial Marquis. There was a huge level difference between him and Leroy!

Darryl only had enough time to raise his arm and protected his chest!

Bam!

Leroy’s punch landed heavily on Darryl’s arm and produced a loud sound before launching him away! He flew over a dozen meters and vomited a mouthful of blood!

“Darryl!” Yvonne’s voice instantly turned hoarse as she quickly ran to Darryl and knelt in front of him teary-eyed. “Darryl, how are you...”

“I’m fine...” Darryl gritted his teeth as he spat out

another mouthful of blood!

“Tsk tsk tsk, you’re quite lucky for a scum,” said Leroy as he stood there and checked Yvonne out before he nodded and continued, “this woman is pretty, too bad you won’t be able to enjoy her anymore. You’re dead for trying to escape!”

Leroy swiftly flew toward Darryl as soon as he finished his words and was prepared to strike him again with his palm!

Darryl was instantly terrified from seeing Leroy’s palm coming closer and felt completely hopeless!

Leroy was too fast and there was no way for Darryl to dodge his attack!

“No!” Yvonne shouted desperately! Darryl had already suffered greatly from Leroy’s punch and if he was to be struck again by his palm, Darryl’s life would truly be lost!

Chapter 543

At that moment, it was unclear what went through Yvonne's mind but she tightly hugged Darryl and abruptly blocked Leroy's attack for Darryl!

Bam!

Leroy's palm struck heavily on Yvonne's back!

Yvonne's body fell forward due to the force and landed into Darryl's arms as she vomited a mouthful of blood!

"Yvonne!" Darryl screamed like a madman and had completely broken down!

Yvonne used her remaining energy and exclaimed at Darryl, "Run, quickly run!"

"Run? None of you are going anywhere," said Leroy coldly as he flew toward them again with his clenched fist!

"Run. Darryl, run!" Yvonne shouted desperately and exhausted her energy to push Darryl away!

However, Leroy landed beside Yvonne and grabbed onto her!

"Tsk tsk tsk, you want to save that Darryl scum?"

Leroy's right hand was wrapped tightly around Yvonne's neck with a sinister look in his eyes. "In that case, you shall die too. I haven't absorbed a woman's spirit energy today. Don't mind if I do and since you've offered yourself!"

Leroy spread his righthand open and immediately held Yvonne's head!

Yvonne was stunned and felt her entire body's energy rapidly being drained before she could react!

"Yvonne!" Darryl instantly roared like a madman!

Yvonne felt her body's energy completely drained in a blink of an eye as her beautiful face instantly turned pale while her body weakened and finally collapsed onto the ground!

"Yvonne!" Darryl's eyes turned red upon seeing what had happened!

Monica mentioned that a woman who had her energy drained would not be able to live past one day!

Darryl's mind went blank as he was filled with rage!

"F*ck you, Leroy! I'm gonna f*cking kill you!"

Darryl had lost all sense of reason and the Blood Drinking Sword suddenly appeared in his hand accompanied by a loud noise!

However, Leroy was ecstatic! He felt his internal

energy rising after absorbing Yvonne's spirit energy! He... He was about to ascend to the Level Four Martial Saint rank!

'The Dark Method is truly a remarkable technique!' Leroy thought as he cackled.

Leroy sat cross-legged on the ground and started cultivating in preparation for his ascension to Level Four Martial Saint! He did not even bother with Darryl as he saw that Abbess Mother Serendipity was rushing toward him!

Abbess Mother Serendipity would naturally stop Darryl!

"Die, Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity indeed shouted angrily as she reached out her palm to strike Darryl!

Darryl was not afraid and instead reached out his own hands and countered her attack!

Bam!

Both of them were knocked back a few steps as their palms clashed!

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her eyebrows and said to Darryl, "You're a Level One Martial Marquis now? I thought you'll be crippled after I made you lose your powers. I never expected that you'd instead ascend to become a Martial Marquis!"

Darryl gritted his teeth as he intensely stared at Abbess Mother Serendipity without saying a word with his completely red eyes!

“Yvonne!” Darryl was teary-eyed as he lifted Yvonne.

At that moment, Yvonne was as pale as a ghost with her entire body being very weak. She seemed extremely frail after having her spirit energy drained and it was obvious she would not be able to survive much longer.

Chapter 544

“Yvonne, don’t scare me alright...” Darryl was teary-eyed as he choked on his words! He felt like being stabbed in the heart!

Darryl could feel Yvonne’s breath slowly weakening.

At that moment, Yvonne snuggled in Darryl’s arms. She felt exhausted but eventually forced a smile. “I ... I’m fine, I just feel really tired...”

“Yvonne, listen to me. You’ll be alright. We’ll be alright...” Darryl’s voice trembled as he spoke softly.

Abbess Mother Serendipity cackled coldly before Darryl could finish his words. “Still flirting even at death’s door. Darryl, there’s no way for you to escape today. I must kill you on behalf of your grandfather, this Darby family’s disgrace!”

Abbess Mother Serendipity flicked her wrist and a longsword appeared in her hand. She then thrust it toward Darryl without any hesitation!

Darryl gritted his teeth. He was not willing to drag out the fight and forced her back by swinging the Blood Drinking Sword at Abbess Mother Serendipity. He then took the chance to escape with Yvonne in his arms!

“Stay right here!” Abbess Mother Serendipity wanted to give chase but she was too slow as Darryl had already disappeared into the night’s darkness.

Sigh...

Darryl escaped again!

Abbess Mother Serendipity was displeased and let out a long sigh before shifting her gaze toward Leroy.

At that moment, Leroy had just absorbed Yvonne’s spirit energy and was preparing for his Level Four Martial Saint’s ascension.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stared at Leroy with surprise. ‘Sect Master Henderson is truly a martial genius. He managed to ascend from Level One Martial Saint to a Level Four Martial Saint in just a few days...’ she thought.

...

Meanwhile, Darryl held onto Yvonne as he ran as fast as he could.

It had not been raining for half a month in Donghai City, but today suddenly started storming. The stormy weather coincidentally matched Darryl’s frantic emotions.

“Yvonne, please hang on. We’re almost reaching

the city. Almost at the hospital, hang on.” Darryl desperately exclaimed at Yvonne while his entire body was drenched by the rain.

Yvonne was in a critical condition, but she still raised her hand and gently caressed Darryl’s face. “Darryl, I never imagined I’ll love someone so much in my life.” Yvonne’s voice was soft and weak as she continued, “My biggest wish is to be with you, to be able to open my eyes and see you every day, but this wish will never be fulfilled, I... I’m going now...”

Darryl’s heart was aching with tears in his eyes. “What nonsense are you talking about? Yvonne, stop talking nonsense!”

Yvonne chuckled weakly. “I’m not talking nonsense ... I won’t be able to live much longer, I can feel it...”

Darryl was heartbroken upon hearing her words. He silently gritted his teeth as he desperately ran with Yvonne in his arms!

Donghai City First Hospital.

It was late at night with only a few doctors and patients in the hospital.

Bang!

Darryl went to the emergency department and kicked open the door!

“Shelly. Get me, Shelly! Quick!” Darryl exclaimed

loudly as he was about to break down.

There were a few nurses in the emergency department who knew Darryl. Even so, they dared not speak up when they saw Yvonne in his arms and immediately called Shelly.

Coincidentally, Shelly was working the night shift tonight and she quickly left her office with her white coat on when she heard of Darryl's arrival.

Shelly hastily walked down the emergency department's hallway and when she saw the drenched Darryl, she could not help but say, "Darryl, what are you doing here at this hour? Why are you so wet..."

"Quick. Save her, quick!" Darryl was in no mood for small talk and exclaimed like a madman.

At that moment, Darryl was like a cornered animal with his terrifying blood-red eyes.

Shelly trembled, quickly stepped forward, and reached out her hand to check Yvonne's pulse.

Shelly's expression instantly changed upon checking Yvonne's pulse!

"Darryl... H-her breath is extremely weak and her heart could stop at any moment. I-I'm afraid I'm powerless..." Shelly dared not look at Darryl's eyes and simply lowered her head while speaking

cautiously.

She had been a doctor for so many years and that was her first time encountering such a medical condition.

Chapter 545

Darryl's mind went abuzz upon hearing Shelly's words!

Shelly was the best doctor in the entire Donghai City. It was truly the end if she said it was hopeless.

Darryl was rendered speechless as he felt a sharp pain in his chest and quietly carried Yvonne to leave the hospital.

Yvonne softly said, "Darryl... Don't waste your energy, I... I just want to spend my final moments with you..."

Darryl was tearing as he walked to the hospital's entrance. "No! I don't believe you can't be saved. This hospital is useless, let's go find another one. Yvonne, please hang on..."

Darryl carried Yvonne and went around Donghai City looking for a doctor like a madman.

It was unclear how many hospitals they visited, but all of them gave the same answer. "I'm powerless." Yvonne's spirit energy had been completely absorbed by Leroy. It was the equivalent of having her vitality drained from her. There was no way of saving Yvonne regardless of how advanced medical

technology was.

Darryl felt completely hopeless when he walked out of the last hospital. He could not contain his anger any longer and unleashed it all at once!

“Ah!”

Darryl roared toward the sky and his voice could be heard across half of Donghai City!

Darryl’s mind went blank as he held Yvonne tightly in his arms under the heavy rain.

“I’m sorry, Yvonne. I’m so sorry...” Darryl’s body shivered as he muttered countless apologies but Yvonne lifted her head and kissed him before he could finish his last apology.

“Mmph...”

Darryl’s voice suddenly stopped as he felt the sweetness of Yvonne’s lips.

Their kiss was over in a moment and Yvonne showed an affectionate expression as she rested against Darryl’s arms. “Darryl, don’t feel bad... I’m already quite satisfied being in your arms. Just keep hugging me like this, okay...”

Darryl felt even worse upon hearing her words and hugged her even tighter.

It was unclear how long they hugged each other,

but Darryl had a sudden realization. “Oh right! I got it! Godfather would surely have a solution! Godfather knows a lot of martial artists, surely there ’s a way to save you!”

How could Darryl have forgotten about his godfather?

Darryl felt hope at that moment. He carried Yvonne, rushed toward the street, and hailed a cab for Mid City’s Carter Mansion.

...

It was the break of dawn as the sun slowly rose over the horizons.

Another busy day had begun as the Mid City’s streets gradually became lively. The air over the streets was crisp after the previous night’s downpour.

An extraordinarily imposing mansion stood at Mid City’s most bustling area. It was none other than the Carter Mansion!

At that moment, Zoran was slowly enjoying his cup of tea in the hall. This tea-drinking habits of his had persisted for over 20 years, hence he had to drink a cup of tea every morning.

“Sir, Young Master has returned!” The housekeeper hurriedly rushed into the hall and reported to Zoran.

Darryl had returned?

Zoran's face was immediately filled with smiles as he placed the teacup down and was about to happily welcome Darryl.

“Godfather!”

Before Zoran could even stand up, he heard Darryl's anxious voice as Darryl held Yvonne in his arms and hurriedly staggered into the hall.

Zoran noticed Darryl's bloodshot eyes and drenched body carrying a barely breathing woman who was as pale as a ghost.

Zoran was surprised and quickly walked toward Darryl. “Darryl, what happened to you? What's going on?”

Thud.

At that moment, Darryl immediately knelt. “Godfather, please save Yvonne. Save her, okay? I'm begging you...”

Chapter 546

As Darryl spoke, he knelt and continuously knocked his forehead against the ground. His forehead started bleeding in a blink of an eye but he could not feel the pain.

Zoran felt sorry for Darryl and quickly held him up. He turned, looked toward Yvonne, and could not help being stunned.

Zoran looked at Yvonne with shock and disbelief. “Was this lady’s spirit energy drained?”

“Godfather, is there a way to save her?” Darryl anxiously asked with an expression of expectance!

Zoran’s expression was uneasy as he spoke solemnly, “Rumor has it there was an evil technique centuries ago called the Dark Method. After cultivating, one will have to absorb the spirit energy of another person. Could this lady have been injured by that evil technique?”

Zoran could not help but sigh and continued, “This technique is extremely insidious. Once a person’s spirit energy has been absorbed, they’ll be exhausted and quickly approach the end of their life. No one can save them.”

What!?

Darryl trembled with his eyes instantly turning red as he cried and knelt on the ground. “Godfather, you have to find a way. Please, I’m begging you...”

Zoran felt helpless as he lifted Darryl. “Darryl, I really don’t have a way of helping you. There’s no way to survive after having one’s spirit energy drained. Judging by this lady’s condition, I can estimate that she’ll have until tonight to live. I think ...you should prepare for her departure.”

Thud!

At that moment, Darryl felt as if he had lost all his energy, and dejectedly sat on the floor.

If even his godfather could not help Yvonne then there was truly no solution.

At that moment, Yvonne barely opened her mouth and forced a smile. “Darryl... I feel a little tired, I wanna rest for a moment.”

Darryl felt a lump in his throat and nodded and said, “Okay, I’ll take you to the room for a rest.” He then carried Yvonne after finishing his words.

Zoran suddenly called out to Darryl as he approached the hall’s entrance. “Darryl, spend time with this lady. Ask if she has any unfulfilled wishes

...”

Zoran felt bad before he could finish his sentence and simply sighed.

Darryl silently nodded his head and carried Yvonne back to his room.

Once in the room, Darryl gently placed Yvonne on the bed and carefully covered her with the sheets.

There was a smile on Yvonne’s pale face as she held onto Darryl’s hand.

“Darryl, do you still remember the trip we had?” Yvonne asked softly. She was extremely weak but her face was brimming with a gentle smile.

“You single-handedly caught the shark during that trip. You were so cool,” said Yvonne softly.

Yvonne knew she would not stay long in this world and did not want to see Darryl suffer, thus she brought up a more relaxing topic.

Darryl remained silent and simply passionately stared at Yvonne.

Yvonne immersed herself in her sweet memories and softly continued, “Dax’s wife was also poisoned during that trip and everyone was so anxious. You refined a pill on the spot despite everyone laughing at you, but everyone was dumbfounded when you

actually refined the pill.”

At that moment, Yvonne stared at Darryl with such adoration at heart that it even overshadowed her pale face. “Did you know from that day onward, you’re my mighty and manly hero? No rich kid could ever compare to you.”

Yvonne's breathing turned rapid from the excitement.

Darryl was suddenly frightened and quickly said to Yvonne, “Don’t talk, get some rest.”

Darryl felt a tugging sensation in his heart as he spoke.

‘Yvonne only has a dozen or so hours left to live and I can’t even save her. What kind of hero am I? What kind of man am I?’ Darryl thought.

Yvonne shook her head with lights glimmering in her eyes. “I still have a lot I want to say to you that even a lifetime won’t be enough to finish them all. If I don’t say it now, I’ll never get the chance in the future.”

Chapter 547

Darryl's eyes shimmered with tears as he smiled and nodded. "Alright. Let's talk, I'm listening."

Darryl gently held Yvonne's hand as he spoke.

At that moment, there was an immense warmth in the room's atmosphere, but within this warmth was a faint sense of misery.

Yvonne smiled as she intensely looked at Darryl and softly said, "Darryl, your relationship with Lily isn't well last time and the way she treated you is also unpleasant. I was so worried, but at the same time envious of her. I always thought about how great it'll be if you're my husband. No matter what other people say or think about you, I'll always be by your side."

Yvonne gently sighed and continued, "But I now know your relationship with Lily has improved as when Abbess Mother Serendipity stabbed you, Lily didn't sleep for two straight days. That's when I know she really cared for you. I'm relieved you've such a good wife caring and accompanying you... Did you know... My biggest regret in life is that I'm unable to marry you? I truly regret it."

At that moment, Yvonne was really tired and felt

like sleeping.

However, she dared close her eyes as she was afraid she would never be able to see Darryl again once she fell asleep.

Darryl felt emotional upon hearing her words and could not hold back his tears as they streamed down his face. He tightly held Yvonne's hand and said, "Yvonne, I'm sorry... It's all my fault..."

Thud.

At that moment, Darryl sincerely got on one knee with his tearful eyes and said, "Yvonne, will you marry me?"

Yvonne's body trembled as she was filled with shock and joy. "Darryl...You..."

"Yvonne, will you marry me?" Darryl repeated with a determined face!

A joyful smile instantly appeared on Yvonne's pale face as she nodded without any hesitation. "Yes."

Yvonne's biggest wish was to be Darryl's wife and she would have of course liked to spend the rest of her life with him!

Darryl was extremely thrilled and smiled widely. He wiped his tears and stood up. "You agreed? That's great, you can't regret it once you've agreed."

Yvonne smiled shyly and did not say a word.

At that moment, Yvonne was frail and pale but the happiness in her brought out an extraordinary beauty in her and caused Darryl to be immediately lost in her beauty.

Darryl stared at her blankly for a few seconds before coming to his senses and said, "Let's get married tonight."

"Sure!" Yvonne replied softly with a shy expression. Even though she only had a day to live, it would be worth it if she could marry Darryl on that day.

However, Yvonne took a look around and softly said, "But we need a lot of things for the wedding. We need flowers, decorations... We have none of that..."

"Right, right, how silly of me," said Darryl as he slapped his forehead.

He smiled and quickly said, "How could I neglect my wife's needs, I'll get them right now."

Darryl finished his words and was about to leave the room.

However, Darryl suddenly stopped before reaching the door. He turned his head and looked at Yvonne

with a worried look. “Yvonne, you’ll be alone...”

Yvonne was too weak at the moment and Darryl was worried something might happen when he was not present.

Yvonne smiled as she felt Darryl’s deep concern and softly said, “Don’t worry, I’ll be fine. Go, I’ll be right here waiting for you. I still want to marry you after all...”

Yvonne was extremely gleeful as she spoke.

Darryl felt a lump in his throat and nodded his head. He did not say another word and quickly left.

Chapter 548

It was evening.

Darryl's head was sweating as he carried bags full of items back to the Carter Mansion.

He bought a lot of wedding supplies such as candles, lanterns, and clothes.

Darryl carried those stuff and quickly jogged back to the mansion as he did not have much time left with Yvonne and had to make good use of every second with her.

As Darryl approached the room, he saw Sara walking toward him.

“Bro!” Sara called out and smilingly asked, “why did you buy so much stuff? What are they? Are these gifts for me?”

Sara was happy to hear from the housekeeper that Darryl had returned, thus she went looking for him.

Darryl put on a smile and said, “I'm getting married today and these are the wedding supplies.”

“Wow, you're getting married!”

Sara was stunned and excitedly said, “Will there be

many guests? I'm sure it'll be super lively!"

Darryl bit his lip and shook his head. "I don't like when it's lively. No one knows about this wedding except for you."

Sara jumped with joy upon hearing his words. "Only I know about this? Then can I come to your wedding?" Sara asked with her urgent looking eyes.

Darryl sighed and smiled wryly. "Come then," said Darryl as he returned to his room.

It would take some time to decorate the wedding room and with his younger sister's help, Darryl would be able to spend more time with Yvonne.

Sara was extremely thrilled and gleefully walked into the room with Darryl. However, she was not aware that Yvonne was badly injured and would not live past tonight.

Yvonne lifted her head and saw Darryl had returned. A slight smile appeared on her pale face. However, she was surprised the moment she saw Sara following behind Darryl. "This kid is..."

Darryl smiled and said, "She's my godsister, she knows we're getting married so she came to help."

Yvonne nodded her head and could not help but smile when she felt Sara's youthful energy before praising, "Your godsister is so likable."

Upon hearing her words, Sara sweetly said, “Sister-in-law, you’re really pretty too. My brother is a lucky man for marrying such a beautiful bride!”

Darryl and Yvonne exchanged looks with each other and smiled without saying a word. After a moment, Darryl handed the decorations to Sara and said, “I’ll hand these duties to you. Help me decorate the room nicely.”

“Sure!” Sara gleefully said as she received the decorations and started busying herself with the flowers.

Yvonne bit her lip and softly said to Darryl, “Darryl, can you promise me something?”

“Definitely! Anything and everything. Say it and I’ll agree!” Darryl firmly responded.

Yvonne forced a smile and said, “During our wedding tonight, please... Please don’t cry... I want my final moments to be a beautiful wedding with you... I want a happy wedding with you... I don’t want to cry...”

“Sure...” Darryl felt a lump in his throat as he carefully supported Yvonne off the bed. “Yvonne, today is our wedding. I’ll of course be happy. Why would I cry? Look, I have brought so many wedding gowns for you, which one do you like?”

Darryl opened up a bag as he spoke and took out several wedding gowns. There were over 20 extravagant dresses.

“Darryl...”

Yvonne was stunned as she could hardly contain the joy inside her. “Why... Why did you buy so many?”

There were so many wedding gowns that Yvonne could not decide on which to wear.

Darryl smiled and passionately looked at Yvonne. “Today is our wedding day, my bride naturally has to dress beautifully! You have to be prettier than last time.”

Of course, Darryl was referring to Yvonne and Jeremy’s wedding.

Chapter 549

“Don’t bring up this upsetting incident anymore,” said Yvonne upon hearing Darryl’s words.

Darryl was the only person Yvonne wanted to spend the rest of her life with. Her previous wedding with Jeremy had been annulled.

Smack.

Darryl came to his senses and quickly slapped himself on the face. “I’m such a fool, I deserve to be punished.”

‘I shouldn’t have brought up that unhappy incident!’ Darryl thought.

Yvonne felt bad and quickly held onto Darryl’s arm. “You dummy, why did you hit yourself?”

She caressed Darryl’s face and was worried. “Does it hurt?”

Darryl shook his head and smiled. “Not one bit. How could I be willing to injure my handsome face?”

Darryl’s words made Yvonne laugh.

At that moment, Darryl pointed toward the

wedding gowns and said, “Look, which one do you like?”

Yvonne nodded as she smiled and chose her favorite dress which Darryl quickly brought over and carefully helped her put it on. Darryl was instantly dumbfounded when Yvonne wore the wedding gown.

Yvonne’s appearance completely changed when she put on the slim-cut wedding gown that showed off her beautiful curves. Although her face was pale, her smile was breathtakingly beautiful.

Yvonne could not help but laugh when she saw Darryl was stunned. She twirled around and asked, “How is it?” However, she was too weak and lost her balance halfway.

Darryl quickly went over and held onto her while his heart was in a lot of pain.

“Yvonne... Are you...”

“I’m alright.” Yvonne got back on her feet and looked at the makeup mirror with a smile. “I... I haven’t put on my makeup, I need to be pretty when I’m marrying you...”

“Let me help...” said Darryl as he choked on his words. Darryl clenched his fists as he held back his tears and then helped Yvonne to the dressing table. 1

“You’re not allowed to cry, okay? You already promised me,” said Yvonne softly as she noticed Darryl’s eyes were turning red. She then took a brush and looked at the mirror and focused on her makeup.

Darryl silently stood behind and watched.

Eventually, Yvonne finished putting on her makeup, and in a blink of an eye, her pale face became immeasurably captivating.

Yvonne was filled with joy as she turned toward Darryl and asked with a huge grin, “How do I look now?”

Darryl’s eyes were red as tears blurred his vision. He dared not lift his head to look at Yvonne and softly said, “You’re so beautiful. There’s no bride in this world that’s comparable to you.”

Yvonne bit her lips when she saw Darryl’s expression, but pretended as though she had not seen anything. She then put up a joyful expression and asked, “What do you think we should name our kids?”

Darryl’s face was filled with tears but he did not want to ruin the moment and played along. “Our children must have great names. Our son will be called Supreme, while our daughter will be Fortune.

Together they'll be Supreme Fortune.”

Yvonne initially laughed at Darryl's nonsense, but alas she could not hold back any longer and burst into tears.

Yvonne bawled her eyes out. 'I'm not even sure if I could live past tomorrow. There's no point in discussing the future, no point in discussing our children.'

“Yvonne, don't cry, don't cry...” Darryl repeated over and over again as he hugged her tightly. “You'll be alright, you'll be alright. We'll have a good life ...and we'll have lots of kids...”

Chapter 550

“Alright, I won’t cry, I won’t cry...” Yvonne wiped her tears and said with a smile, “Alright then, let’s start the wedding ceremony.”

“Great!” Darryl held Yvonne’s hand and slowly stood up.

At that moment, Sara had finished nicely and splendidly decorating the room.

Sara was happy to see the couple had already knelt. “Are you guys starting the ceremony? That’s great, I’ll be your witness!”

Sara finished her words and energetically walked toward the couple while joyfully exclaimed, “We gather here today for the marriage between my brother and Miss Yvonne. May you be blessed with joy and happiness with the Heavens bearing witness ... First bow to the Heavens and Earth!”

Darryl and Yvonne smiled at each other and bowed with their hands intertwined.

Sara then exclaimed, “The second bow as a respect to the Elders!”

The couple then faced toward Donghai City and

bowed.

At that moment, Darryl could feel Yvonne's body trembling as if trying to control her emotions.

Yvonne was the Young family's sole daughter. She naturally had hoped for her father's blessing during her wedding with Darryl but under such circumstances... She was unsure how much longer she could live and held back her regretful feelings.

After they bowed respectfully to each other, Darryl held Yvonne and stood up with unease filling his heart.

At that moment, Sara smilingly said, "Bro, you and Miss Yvonne are a match made in heaven, I'm so envious. I wish both of you eternal happiness and stay together till you're old."

"Yes, together till we're old..." Yvonne could not help herself and started tearing up.

Sara was stunned and worriedly asked, "Yvonne, what's wrong?"

'What's going on? Did I say something wrong?' Sara thought.

Sigh...

Darryl took a deep breath and held back the pains in his heart as he forced a smile. "It's fine, she's just too excited."

Sara nodded her head but was still doubtful.

‘Shouldn’t she be laughing if she’s happy? Why is she still crying? How strange...’ Sara thought.

She then smilingly said, “Alright, it's time for both of you to enter the bridal chamber. I won’t bother you any longer.” Sara left as soon as she finished her words.

At that moment, Darryl could feel Yvonne’s vitality worsening. He felt bad and softly said, “Yvonne, go lay on the bed and rest a moment.”

Yvonne nodded her head and let Darryl carry her to the bed with her arms wrapped around his neck.

Yvonne laid down and softly said, “You should rest too. You must be tired after carrying me around the whole night.”

Darryl smiled and nodded. “Sure.”

At that moment, both of them had the same thoughts. No matter what was going to happen in the future, they wanted to treasure every second they had together at that moment.

As Darryl was about to lie down, the bedroom door suddenly opened!

Creak.

A slender and alluring figure slowly walked into the

room.

It was Susan who walked in.

Darryl was surprised to see her and quickly stood up and asked, "Auntie Susan? Is something wrong?"

Yvonne's expression was also uneasy as she felt a little awkward. She was at someone else's house after all.

Susan looked around and noticed the room's decorations. There was a certain curiosity on her face as she asked, "Did you guys just get married?"

Although Susan was curious, she had no intention of reprimanding them.

At that moment, Darryl nodded and smiled wryly. "Yes, we did. Yvonne had her spirit energy drained and doesn't have much time left. Both of us had the same idea and didn't want to leave any regrets behind."

Susan silently nodded upon hearing his words and said, "Darryl, I can tell that you have a deep affection for Yvonne, but you shouldn't feel too bad. There might still be a sliver of hope for her."

What?

There was a way to save Yvonne?

At that moment, Darryl's entire body trembled as

he anxiously exclaimed, “Auntie Susan, tell me quickly. How can Yvonne be saved?” ①

Susan smiled faintly and shook her head. “I can tell you how to save her, but let me be clear that you shouldn’t put too much hope in this method.”

Chapter 551

“Sure!” Darryl nodded. At least there was hope, however small it was.

Susan sighed as she bit her lip. “Also, I can tell you how to save her, but you have to promise me something.”

“Auntie Susan, anything,” Darryl replied without hesitation, nodding.

Susan sighed before she looked at Darryl seriously. “This is about when Rachel tricked you into the peach blossom forest. I don’t want you to tell your godfather. Never mention this again.”

“I promise you, I’ll never speak of it again,” Darryl agreed immediately. Doing this was nothing compared to Yvonne’s life.

Susan smiled. “Great. I’ll tell you. This lady’s essence has been absorbed using the Dark Method. The Dark Method is an ancient, thousand-year-old cultivation method from the New World. Perhaps someone skilled from the New World might be able to help her.

“If you bring her to the New World, perhaps there might still be a chance. However, she only has a few

hours left. I don't think you can save her in time.”

‘New World?’ Darryl wondered, delighted.

It was true, Leroy Henderson did receive the Dark Method manual from the New World Emperor! Yvette was the New World Princess, so perhaps she might have a solution?

“Yvonne, let me make a phone call!” Darryl said anxiously before he headed out.

He fished his phone out and called Yvette.

...

Yvette and Lily were watching a movie. They were the center of attention in the cinema. The boys were paying more attention to them than to the movie.

“Lily, where's your husband?” Yvette asked suddenly.

She still felt humiliated from being tied to a tree then tortured by Darryl using Formations until she begged for him to stop. However, this was her vendetta with Darryl; it did not stop her from being best friends with Lily.

Yvette could also see that Lily does not know that Darryl was Indomitable Darby.

“My husband?” Lily asked, holding a bucket of popcorn. “My husband hasn't been back for two

days. I can't even contact him. Why do you ask about him?" she laughed.

"Nothing, just making conversation." Yvette blushed. She was seething with rage as she thought about how Darryl humiliated her.

What made matters worse was when the Twelve Royal Guards were about to apprehend Darryl, a man and woman rescued him. Yvette has been looking for him ever since, to repay the humiliation. However, it was like he vanished from the face of the Earth.

Yvette's phone suddenly rang.

"Lily, wait for me. I need to take this call," she said to Lily apologetically.

She thought it would be from one of her men, but she was stunned when she saw it was from Darryl. How dare he call her?

She bit her lip and answered the call.

"Yvette, I need a favor. You have to help me," Darryl said anxiously.

'You humiliated me, but you want me to help you? Dream on!' Yvette thought.

She laughed menacingly, "Darryl, Indomitable Darby. You're the sect master of Elysium Gate. Why

do you need a favor from me?”

“Yvette, my good sister, you have to help me!”

Darryl replied agitated.

“What sister? Who’s your sister?” Yvette stomped her feet angrily.

“During the Formation, you called me brother. I’m older than you, so isn’t it normal that I call you my younger sister?” Darryl explained helplessly.

“How dare you bring up what happened before!” Yvette yelled angrily.

Chapter 552

“Darryl, after all that, you still want me to help you? Have you gone mad?” Yvette asked coldly.

Darryl was so anxious he was sweating profusely as he said, “I know you’re still angry with me. I shouldn’t have treated you that way at the Formation. I’m sorry, but I really need your help desperately. As long as you help me, I’ll do anything!”

Yvette was elated. “Say, what can I help you with?”

“I have a friend, and her essence was absorbed. Do you have a way to heal her?” Darryl asked, hopefully.

‘What? Her essence was absorbed?’ Yvette contemplated.

Yvette raised her eyebrows. “Was it by the Dark Method?”

There was only one cultivation method that absorbed a human’s essence. The manual was always kept in the palace’s library. Due to its insidious nature, her father banned anyone from cultivating the Dark Method.

“Yes! Can you save her?” Darryl asked eagerly.

Yvette could sense his restlessness. She smiled and said, "I'm not that highly skilled. I can't save her."

Darryl's heart dropped as he lost all hope.

"But, I know an acupuncture method called the Sterling Life Method. It could help you extend her life," Yvette added.

"The Sterling Life Method?" Darryl asked.

"As long as she's still breathing, I can puncture three sterling needles in her. This helps her stay alive for another three more months. However, in these three months, she'll be in a vegetative state. She won't be able to speak or move."

Yvette was filled with pride. There were less than five people in the world that were skilled in this method.

"Please help me extend her life!"

"Why should I?" Yvette sneered.

"I'll do anything! As long as I can do it, I will!"

"Anything?"

"Yes. As long as you agree to help, I'll do anything for you!" Darryl took a deep breath.

Yvette thought for a while, then said, "Ok, I'll help you this time. But I haven't thought about what I

want from you. So hold on to this. You better not break your promise!”

“Don’t worry. I’m a man of my word. I’ll be at the Carter Mansion in Mid City. Please go there. Quick! I’m afraid she won’t live for much longer!” Darryl cried in a panic, almost in tears.

Chapter 553

Three hours later, Yvette finally arrived at the Carter Mansion. She was in awe at how luxurious it was.

“There were rumors that Zoran accepted you as his godson. It looks like it was true,” she said to Darryl.

Darryl forced a smile and led her to Yvonne.

Yvette was stunned as she asked, “The person you want to save is her?”

Though Yvonne had not been to the Hexad School, Yvette still recognized Yvonne as a famous person in school.

“Yes. Please, hurry.” Darryl nodded.

Yvette scanned the surroundings as she exclaimed, “You both got married here?”

Darryl nodded.

“You lucky b*stard. It’s not enough that you have Lily, but you married Yvonne as well?” she teased.

“Can we save her first?” Darryl panicked.

“My, my, Sect Master Darby is anxious. Remember your promise.” Yvette laughed.

“Yes, yes. I owe you one!” Darryl nodded.

Yvette nodded in satisfaction. She flipped her wrist, and three sterling needles appeared. She approached Yvonne and slowly punctured her arm.

Darryl stood next to them, not even daring to breathe.

He could clearly see the points that were punctured were crucial acupoints. A single mistake, and Yvonne could die.

“There. Done,” Yvette said.

Yvonne’s face regained its color. However, she was in a deep sleep.

“She can’t move or talk now. But she can hear what you’re saying,” Yvette said with a smile before becoming serious. “There’s one more thing I have to remind you. The Sterling Life Method can only be used once. No one can touch those three needles on her arm. Not a single one! If any of the needles are pulled out, she will wake up, and her body will return to its previous state—which I’m guessing she has at most three hours left to live?”

“I’ll be careful,” Darryl replied. He thought of bringing Yvonne back to Lily’s mansion in Donghai City. He could let her rest there for the next three months, so no one would disturb her, and the

needle would remain safely in place.

Chapter 554

“Remember, you owe me one,” Yvette said before she left.

That night, Darryl slept on the floor, watching over Yvonne. He was afraid if he slept on the bed, he might touch the needles.

He did not sleep well. He brought Yvonne back to Donghai City the next day. On the journey, he called Zephyr and instructed him to search for a cure for Yvonne.

It was noon when Darryl brought Yvonne back home and realized that no one was home. He brought her straight to the bedroom, feeling slightly conflicted as he was not sure if Lily would be upset with him bringing Yvonne home.

Thinking of Lily, he quickly called her.

She picked up the call shortly, sounding excited. “Hubby! You finally called! Where have you been for the past two days?”

Lily had been worried sick.

“I had something going on,” Darryl laughed.

He frowned as he could hear a commotion going on

Lily's end of the call. "Lily, where are you?"

Lily said cheerfully, "I'm at Angela Angel's concert! It's at Donghai Television Station. Come find me!"

Darryl was familiar with Angela Angel, the famous pop star. When Darryl was still in high school, Angela's *The Invisible Wings* was the most popular song in the entire country.

Though she rarely produced new albums, she was still active in different entertainment programs. For the past two years, she was a judge in the reality TV competition *The Ethereal Singer*. She was considered a legend in the entertainment industry.

"Hubby, come quick! The concert hasn't started yet, so I'll be waiting for you!" Lily urged.

"Alright, I'll be there shortly," Darryl replied. He decided it would be better to tell her about Yvonne in person.

At the Donghai Satellite Television Building, one of Donghai City's attractions, many galas and concerts were held here.

Angela Angel's concert was a huge deal in Donghai City, and many wealthy fans came to support her.

When Darryl reached the building, there was already a crowd. The fans were extremely excited, making him in awe of Angela's influence.

Giselle Lindt, who was under his entertainment company, was nowhere near as influential as Angela. After all, Giselle was still new to the scene. This concert was larger than Donghai City's annual Mid Autumn Festival gala.

Darryl walked right into the lounge that Lily said she would be waiting for him. The area was for the rich and VIPs. Ordinary fans could only wait outside.

The lounge was equally crowded, with many people resting on the sofas provided. Darryl spotted Lily right away and noticed that next to Lily were two other ladies—Circe Newman and Evelyn Featherstone.

'F*ck, why is Evelyn here?' Darryl swore silently.

He scanned his surroundings. He had to admit; the three ladies together were a stunning view as they were all beautiful in their own ways.

Lily was dressed in a white suit, with the limited Worship of Crystal heels. She was sexy and elegant at the same time. Circe was wearing a long black dress, looking mysterious and icy, while Evelyn looked cute in jeans and a fleece top. She was here today to hang out with Circe. However, Circe told her that she was watching a concert with another good friend of hers, so Evelyn tagged along.

Though Evelyn was still young, she looked lady-

like. The three of them together were stunning, and Darryl could see that men were ogling them.

“Hubby!” Lily spotted Darryl as she approached him happily and hugged his arms.

Chapter 555

‘What? This man’s her husband?’ the men thought as they looked at Darryl with envy and disgust.

Lily ignored the glares as she held onto Darryl’s hand and smiled. “Hubby, you know Circe, of course, I won’t need to introduce her to you. This is Evelyn Featherstone, she’s Circe’s friend. She participated in the Lion Slaughtering Conference. If I recall correctly you two competed against each other.”

Lily introduced Evelyn without realizing that Evelyn and Darryl had known each other for a long time! Evelyn was seething with rage as she looked at Lily in surprise and asked, “Lily, he’s your husband?”

When Evelyn first met Lily, she thought Lily was pretty and kind. Who knew such a kind girl would marry an ass*le! Life was unfair!

Lily was stunned as she laughed, “You two know each other?”

“No one wants to know him! He’s a piece of cow dung!” Evelyn pursed her lips.

Lily felt awkward from her reply. She glared at

Darryl thinking to herself who knew what Darryl did this time to offend Evelyn.

Circe could not help but laugh. She tugged on Evelyn's hand and said, "Evelyn, stop it."

She knew about the rivalry between Darryl and Evelyn. It was nothing serious, but they just could not stand each other. They would bicker every time they met.

"Miss Evelyn, we've known each other for a long time. I don't think it's good to talk bad about me every time you see me right?" Darryl teased.

Darryl was furious as well. The last time he was at the bar with Megan and Evelyn's best friends, they got drunk. When he woke up, his Supreme Mystery Scripture and Celestial Silkworm Armor were gone.

'I haven't paid you back for what you did, but now you dare talk bad about me?' Darryl thought.

Suddenly a weird voice from afar called for. "Darryl Darby!"

He looked to see who called him, and it was Jeremy Langley and a few of his followers—they looked angry. Jeremy was still angry that Darryl caused a scene during his wedding with Yvonne.

However, Jeremy was an infamous playboy. Shortly after Yvonne, he met another girl called Vera Burns.

He wanted to bring Vera to Angela's concert and maybe bring her to a hotel to have some fun after the concert. Who knew he would meet Darryl today!

Jeremy was extremely furious as he loathed Darryl to his bones.

If it was not for Darryl, he could have slept with Yvonne. It was Darryl that stole his wife from him!

"You dare come back to Donghai City? You must be itching for death!" Jeremy said coldly as his followers approached Darryl.

"Why should I be afraid?" Darryl clenched his fist. He has not paid back for Jeremy forcing Yvonne to marry him.

The atmosphere in the lounge was tense and many people looked on curiously.

Vera pulled Jeremy and said, "We're here to watch a concert. Don't bother with this hillbilly. Let him go."

Jeremy nodded. He pointed at Darryl and said arrogantly, "Did you hear that? My woman said to not bother with you. I don't want my mood to be ruined, so if you kneel and apologize, I'll let you go."

"Apologize?" Darryl took a long breath. He could

barely contain his anger. Thinking about how Yvonne had only three months left to live, his anger rose.

“I don’t think you can handle my apology.” Darryl clenched his fist so tightly, his nails dug into his flesh.

A burst of laughter erupted.

“Is he crazy? He doesn’t even have his powers. How dare he talk back?”

“Yes, he must want to die.”

Lily panicked, so she quickly stood up and said, “Hubby, don’t fight him. Just apologize.”

Chapter 556

How could Lily not panic? With Darryl's current powers, he could not afford to offend Jeremy.

The Langleys were wealthy and powerful, plus Jeremy's master was Zachary Hume, the Deputy Head of Tianshan School—he was well supported.

Darryl, in comparison, had nothing. He did not have any Internal Energy at all. Challenging Jeremy would only end badly for him.

No one expected that Darryl would reply coldly, “Jeremy, I'll heed your suggestion that one should kneel and apologize. But it should be you, your new girlfriend, and your bunch of b*tches.”

‘What?’ Everyone was so stunned they thought they misheard Darryl.

‘Is this person crazy? He doesn't have any powers, his corporation is bankrupt, and yet he still has the guts to say that?’ everyone thought.

“You're really looking for death. Get him!” Jeremy ordered his men. He did not want to fight Darryl, but Darryl's arrogance aggravated him. He did not care where he currently was; Darryl needed a beating.

Everyone gasped as they could feel Jeremy's immense power. He was a Level Three Master General and considered one of the most powerful people in Donghai City.

Everyone thought Darryl was done for.

"Hubby, be careful!" she exclaimed.

She was so worried she bit her lip until it bled and closed her eyes. She could not bear to watch her husband get beaten up.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Sounds of punches rang through the lounge.

When Lily opened her eyes, she would never forget what she saw for the rest of her life. Darryl stood there firmly while Jeremy's men were all lying on the floor.

Jeremy was bewildered as he was the only one left standing. The entire lounge was eerily silent as no one could see how Darryl had beat his opponents. It all happened in a blur.

Jeremy was sweating profusely. What was happening? Abbess Mother Serendipity told him that Darryl could never get his powers back. How did he grow stronger instead?

When Jeremy realized his mistake, it was too late.

He could see Darryl walking towards him calmly; his every step reverberated throughout the entire lounge.

“For a Nine Resurrection Pill, you asked Yvonne to marry you,” Darryl said, his eyes blazing with anger as he looked at Jeremy straight in the eye. “I’ve returned the pill a hundred times to you. Who will return Yvonne to me? She’s clinging on to her life. Who the f*ck can return her to me?!”

Chapter 557

Darryl screamed, completely losing it. He rushed forward and grabbed Jeremy by the collar, throwing punch after punch.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Each punch was harder than the other.

Darryl released a powerful deep current of Pure Internal Energy that enveloped the crowd. It made the entire crowd grow silent. Everyone was stunned by Darryl. He was like a lunatic who lost all control as Jeremy howled in pain with every punch.

“Darryl, how dare you hit me!” Jeremy’s face was bleeding. He squirmed but could not move. “You’re dead! You’re dead! My Master is here, and I’ll make sure you die here today!” he continued screaming. His head was swollen, yet he could not fight back.

“Hubby, stop. Let’s go.” Lily was anxious as she knew of Zachary’s reputation. If he was here, Darryl would be dead.

“Go? You think you can leave this place today with my Master here?” Jeremy laughed maniacally.

‘Master?’ Darryl thought.

“If your Master is here, I’ll beat him up as well,” Darryl replied.

“Who dares talk so boldly?” a man wearing a black Chinese jacket said as he appeared from the crowd—it was Zachary Hume.

Jeremy grabbed on to Zachary desperately, yelling, “Master, master, help me!”

Zachary glared at Darryl. “How dare you beat my disciple up in public?”

He was livid as Jeremy was his favorite disciple.

Darryl took a deep breath and kicked Jeremy to the floor. “So what if I hit him?”

“You-! He’s my disciple!” Zachary yelled.

“So what if he’s your disciple?” Darryl asked slowly.

“You’re asking to die! You filth! It’s bad enough you joined a cult, but now you dare beat my disciple! I won’t forgive you!” Zachary rushed forward.

“Hubby, run!” Lily yelled, but Darryl was not afraid at all.

“Even till now, he’s still pretending. He deserves to be hit!” Evelyn jeered.

Chapter 558

A strong Internal Energy erupted from Zachary. It was so powerful it warped the air around him as cracks appeared all over him.

“Darryl’s going to die,” everyone gasped.

“He deserves it!”

Everyone could feel that Zachary was going to kill Darryl! Who could avoid such a strong hit?

“Hubby!” Lily yelled. She wanted to help him, but it was too late.

Circe panicked too as she said, “Darryl, run! What are you waiting for?”

Even she could see that Zachary was outraged, but Darryl did not move at all. He just stared at Zachary coldly.

Zachary threw a powerful punch. Many did not dare look, but they knew Darryl was done for.

Darryl calmly moved aside to avoid the punch. “You clown.” Then, he slapped Zachary.

Truth be told, it was hard to fight Zachary face to face. However, Zachary underestimated Darryl. Who

knew he had such quick reflexes that he could avoid Zachary's punch?

When Darryl landed a slap on Zachary's face, only then did Zachary realize that he had underestimated Darryl. It was too late!

Slap!

Darryl's slap was quick and powerful. It caused Zachary to fly in the air and land twenty meters away. He spat out blood when he landed.

Zachary felt as if his organs were damaged, and he passed out.

Everyone gasped. All it took was one slap to defeat the Deputy Head of Tianshan School?

They looked at Darryl as if looking at a monster. Lily and Circe were still in shock.

"Apologize now!" Darryl said as he slowly approached Jeremy.

Jeremy could not say a single word. He was floored. Never in his life did he imagine his Master would be beaten by Darryl. After all, his Master was a Level Four Martial Marquis!

Jeremy swallowed hard as he could feel Darryl had been releasing a strong current of Internal Energy, crushing him till he could barely breathe. If he did

not apologize any sooner, he was going to die!

“I’m sorry. I’m sorry,” Jeremy apologized.

“Kneel and apologize. As you suggested just now,” Darryl demanded.

“I...” Jeremy hesitated. He wanted to beat Darryl up in front of Vera to impress her. Who knew he would be utterly humiliated.

How could he further humiliate himself by kneeling for Darryl?

Chapter 559

Jeremy wanted to say no. However, he saw that Darryl had a long blood-red sword in his hand, so he knew he had no other choice unless he wanted to die.

Thud!

Jeremy knelt. He could care less about his ego anymore. Compared to his own life, his ego meant nothing.

“I’m sorry. I’m sorry, Mister Darryl,” Jeremy apologized.

“You too.” Darryl looked at Vera.

Thud!

Just one look was enough to make Vera’s knees weak. She knelt immediately and apologized as well.

It was not till then, did Darryl finally start to calm down. He frowned at Jeremy and Vera. It was a bloody dog-eat-dog world, where the strong preyed on the weak. As long as you could fight, people would beg for your forgiveness.

When he was powerless, the Six Orthodox Sects and Clans ganged up to bully him. Dax was beaten up by

the Emei sect, Yvonne's essence was absorbed, and her life was hanging by a thread. These are the things that he will never forget!

"F*ck off," Darryl said.

Jeremy and his men carried Zachary away and scrambled. The crowd dissipated as well with a new impression of Darryl. This live-in son-in-law was not as useless as he used to be.

"Ladies and Gentlemen, the concert will start shortly. Please be seated," an announcer said.

Lily came to her senses and grabbed Darryl's arm as they walked to their seats. "Hubby, you were amazing!"

Evelyn harrumphed and jeered, "What was so amazing about that? It was Zachary who was weak."

"Evelyn, stop talking and follow me!" Circe reprimanded.

Tens of thousands of people filled the concert venue as the stage set was brightly lit and looked stunning. Every fan held a glow stick in their hands and was looking forward to seeing Angela Angel.

Lily booked great seats at Row Three, 111, 112, 113, and 114. Darryl was supposed to sit at 111, but Lily complained that the person in front of her was blocking her view, so Darryl swapped seats with her.

It was Darryl's turn to be awkward as he was sandwiched in between Lily and Evelyn.

When he was about to take his seat, Evelyn kicked his leg.

'What the f*ck? Why am I being kicked for no reason?' Darryl thought

"What are you doing?" he growled.

"Why are you yelling? It was an accident," Evelyn said coldly.

He did not bother arguing with her. He sat down but jumped back up immediately as he felt something sharp poke his butt. He saw an earring hook on the chair and noticed his butt was bleeding.

"What is your problem?!" he noticed Evelyn did not have her left earring. It does not take a genius to guess that the earring on the chair belonged to her.

"I dropped my earring! It was an accident," Evelyn harrumphed. She picked up the earring hook and threw it away. "You destroyed my earring, yet you complain? How rude. Also, can you not sit next to me. I'm disgusted by you," she giggled.

Darryl rolled his eyes at her. This woman was impossible.

Chapter 560

Darryl was not bothered with Evelyn. He took his seat, but he thoroughly checked for other sharp objects before sitting down.

As he took his seat, Darryl scanned his surroundings. He became emotional from the passion of Angela's fans. This was the difference between a legendary pop star and a regular one. The size of her concert was as huge as an international pop star's.

“Angela! Angela!” the crowd chanted, brimming with excitement as the concert started.

An elegant figure in a maroon evening gown, encrusted with crystals, appeared on stage. She looked every bit the legendary pop star that she was, looking utterly gorgeous!

Darryl was in awe. Angela was in her thirties, but she maintained her figure and appearance well. There was no sign of aging and especially with her alluring figure, she looked like she was in her twenties.

“Hello, Donghai City! I'm Angela Angel! How are y' all doing!” Angela asked.

The crowd went wild as they cheered and applauded. Angela was a pro at interacting with the crowd as she smiled and waved at them naturally; it did not feel forced at all. Every word she said was met with cheers and screams. The atmosphere at the concert was exciting.

“Angela, I love you!”

“Angela!”

Lily was extremely excited. However, she still maintained her posture as she did not scream out loud. Evelyn, on the other hand, was ecstatic. She waved her glow stick in the air, screaming, “Angela! Angela!”

Who knew that she would be a die-hard fan.

Evelyn was overjoyed that she could see her idol in person. She waved her glow stick so hard that it hit Darryl square on his head.

‘F*ck! First the earring, now this?’ Darryl thought.

“You...” Darryl said.

“Shut up! I’m telling you I’m here to watch Angela’s concert. Don’t you dare disturb me!” Evelyn glared at Darryl.

‘What the f*ck?’ Darryl cursed to himself, ignoring her.

Angela's live singing was amazing. She sang many of her classics, and after an hour of singing, Angela's voice was hoarse.

Her fans panicked as they yelled, "Angela, stop singing!"

"Take care of your voice!"

Angela smiled. "Why don't all of you sing this next song with me? The Invisible Wings."

The crowd roared.

Her angelic voice echoed throughout the entire concert venue. This was a classic that everyone knew. Everyone sang along, with many crying at the song, including Evelyn.

Darryl was enjoying himself too when suddenly, his phone rang. He saw that it was from Dax. The last he heard from him was that he was captured by the Abbess Mother Serendipity and how Jean tortured him half to death.

Chapter 561

The whole time Dax was healing, he did not contact Darryl at all. Darryl was thrilled that he called him, so he quickly picked up the call.

However, the concert was too noisy. He could not hear a single word that Dax was saying.

“Dax!” Darryl yelled.

Just when he was about to end the call to send Dax a message, Evelyn snatched his phone and threw it on the floor.

“Can you be any more annoying? We’re here to watch a concert, and you’re on a call? Don’t you have any manners?” Evelyn growled.

“What the f*ck are you doing?” Darryl picked up his phone and saw the screen was shattered. “What’s your problem? Can’t I take a call?”

“No, you can’t! You’re near me, so if you talk, I can’t hear her sing!” Evelyn retorted.

Once Angela had finished her song, she held her microphone and smiled. “I want to thank you all for singing with me. This concert means a lot to me, and I’ll remember it for the rest of my life. Thank

you for all the support you've given me.”

The crowd was silent as they let her speak.

Angela continued, “I've prepared a special surprise today to give back to all of you. There are paper and pens on your seats. Write down your wishes, fold them into a paper plane and throw it at me.

Whoever I pick, I'll try to fulfill their wishes.”

The crowd quickly scrambled under their seats, searching for the pen and paper.

Though the possibility of Angela picking up their paper planes was slim to none, they were still extremely excited nevertheless. It would be an honor to be picked by Angela Angel!

Darryl could see that Evelyn was engrossed in writing her wishes down. She filled the entire paper as if writing a long essay.

“Hubby, why don't you write one as well?” Lily urged Darryl.

“Sure, sure.” he shook his head. His biggest wish now was for Yvonne to get better. However, no one could fulfill his wish.

He thought for a while before he looked at Evelyn and smiled cheekily. He thought about how Evelyn kicked him and poked him with her earring. He quickly wrote his wish on the paper and folded it

into a paper plane.

After a few minutes, Angela said, “Are you ready? I’ll count to three, then throw your paper planes, ok? Your seat number is written on the paper. Whoever gets picked, I’ll read out the seat number. The camera will then pan towards the lucky person. You got it?”

“Ok!”

Angela smiled. “I’ll count to three, then throw your paper planes at me, ok?”

“Ok!” The crowd cheered.

“One!”

“Two!”

“Three!”

Countless paper planes flew in the air, making it a sight to see. It was like countless shooting stars. Many paper planes barely reached the stage, but only one flew in a perfectly straight line and landed directly on Angela’s chest, which she caught.

Chapter 562

The crowd gasped. Who could be so lucky?

They looked on with hope as Angela unfolded the paper plane. "I'll read out the wish on this paper."

Angela said with a smile, "This lucky person wrote: Dear Angela, I brought my daughter here with me today. She's seated next to me on my right. Five years ago, my daughter fell sick and became mute. She loves you very much, so I brought her here. My wish is for you to hug my daughter. The camera will now show the lucky person on the screen. Let's see who this person is."

The lucky person was seated in Row Three, 112.

The camera panned to the seat Angela mentioned. It was Darryl!

Lily was stunned as she thought, 'Since when did Darryl have a daughter? And a mute one as well?'

The crowd roared. Many knew Darryl was a live-in son-in-law, but they have never heard of him having a daughter.

Angela smiled. "Please show us his daughter that's seated to his right."

The camera panned to Evelyn!

“Darryl! You!” Evelyn was livid. She finally realized that Darryl wanted to embarrass her.

Darryl quickly lifted his hand and jabbed at Evelyn’s Mute Acupoint, making her unable to speak. 1

“My good daughter,” he laughed.

‘This b*stard!’ Evelyn cursed to herself. She was so embarrassed and enraged, but she could not speak!

“Let’s bring this father-daughter duo onstage. The father looks extremely young! Let’s welcome them!” Angela announced.

Darryl tried to contain his laughter as he said to Evelyn, “My lovely daughter, your idol invited you up on stage!”

Evelyn was so furious she wanted to kill Darryl! However, she could not do anything as this was her favorite idol’s concert, so she kept it all in.

Watching her become furious but unable to speak, Darryl was delighted. He could finally get payback for all the things Evelyn did to him.

Lily and Circe were laughing in amusement. These two rivals really could not stop.

When they went up on stage, Evelyn was the center

of attention. They looked at her, then they looked at Darryl, stunned.

‘How could a young man like Darryl have a daughter that old? Is this some sort of joke?’ everyone thought.

“You’re extremely young to be a father. How old are you?” Angela asked curiously.

“I married early,” Darryl lied.

“You look really young! You don’t look like father and daughter, more like siblings,” Angela said.

“Yes, too young!” someone in the audience yelled.

Chapter 563

“He looks handsome as well!”

However, some of the people in the audience recognized Darryl.

“Isn’t that the live-in son-in-law?”

“Since when did he have a daughter?” the crowd yelled.

Angela could not hear the yells over the cheers of the crowd as she hugged Evelyn.

Evelyn’s mind blanked as her idol hugged her. Suddenly she was not that angry anymore, but overjoyed.

Angela looked at Evelyn and said, “Girl, I can see that your father loves you a lot. His wish was all about you. Why don’t you hug him as well?”

‘What? You want me to hug this assh*le?’ Evelyn thought.

She trembled in defiance. However, she was in front of such a huge crowd. If she did not hug Darryl, her idol would be disappointed, and it would be extremely awkward.

Evelyn bit her lip as she quickly hugged Darryl then

left.

Darryl was amused that Evelyn was forced to hug him.

“My good daughter, your wish, has been fulfilled. Let’s go,” Darryl urged.

Evelyn glared at him before turning to smile at Angela as they left the stage.

The concert came to an end, but the crowd was not willing to leave. Angela had a few encores before it truly ended.

Darryl held Lily’s hand and walked out. Evelyn rushed over and kicked Darryl in the butt, causing him to almost fall over.

“My good daughter, how could you kick your father?” he said rudely.

Evelyn was still mute. She glared at Darryl and walked off. Circe was angry yet found the whole thing funny.

“Darryl, you’ve made Evelyn angry. I’m gonna go console her,” she said before she ran after Evelyn.

Lily hugged Darryl’s arm and complained, “Hubby, Evelyn’s just a girl. How could you bully her?”

‘Bully her?’ Darryl thought.

Darryl smiled bitterly, “I’m the one being bullied!

You didn't see how her earring poked my butt or how she shattered my phone!"

Lily laughed as she leaned her head on Darryl's shoulders.

"Honey, I have something to tell you," Darryl said lightly.

"What is it?"

Darryl took a deep breath. "Yvonne was injured while trying to save me. We...got married." 1

Darryl was conflicted about telling her for a very long time, but he finally decided to reveal it.

Lily trembled as the smile on her face disappeared. She was completely stunned.

Darryl panicked. "Yvonne tried to save me. Her essence was absorbed, and she had only a few remaining hours left to live. I didn't want her to have any regrets, so I-

"I don't want to hear this." Lily's eyes were wet. She could see that Darryl and Yvonne had feelings for each other. It was a stab to her heart that they got married. 1

"I want to be alone." Lily ran off.

Darryl thought of chasing after her when his phone rang. Through his cracked screen, he could see that

it was from Dax.

He quickly picked up.

“Darryl! Come to the Sanders Mansion. Quick!” Dax said anxiously.

Chapter 564

Darryl asked in a panic, “What happened?!”

Dax shook his head. “I just saved a person. He’s badly injured. Do you have any elixir that can help him? Bring it here quick!”

“F*ck you! You scared me,” Darryl said angrily. He thought that Abbess Mother Serendipity came looking for trouble again. “Who did you save?”

“I don’t know him. I met him in the woods, and he had wounds all over his body. I couldn’t just leave him there, so I brought him home.”

Darryl hung up and hailed a taxi.

“Sanders Mansion,” Darryl said.

The taxi driver could not help but turn around and look at Darryl. The Sanders Mansion was famous in Donghai City; after all, Dax Sanders was an influential person. However, his power and influence had dropped a lot since Abbess Mother Serendipity captured him and killed many of his men.

Now Donghai City is under the rule of Abby and Brandon Guy.

Darryl's phone rang when he was about to take a short nap. He thought it was Dax again, but it was from Chester Wilson, the Military Adviser of the Eternal Life Palace Sect.

'Why would Chester call me all of a sudden?' Darryl wondered as he picked up the call.

"Brother! Something bad's happened!" Chester yelled.

"Chester, what happened? Don't worry. Take it slowly," Darryl comforted. He was slightly confused as to why Chester was so anxious.

Chester took a deep breath and started to explain slowly, "Three days ago, our Sect Master left our Altar to go to Donghai City. No one dared ask why he was going. But, today, he sent us a rescue signal! He would only send us the signal when he's in serious danger! Something must have happened to him. Please help us find him!"

Darryl comforted him, "Sure, sure. Don't panic. I'll send my men to search for him."

Darryl hung up, then called Caelan Lewis to gather his men and search for Eternal Life Palace's Sect Master in Donghai City.

At the Sanders Mansion, Dax was pacing around solemnly in his room. There was a badly injured

man on his bed. He had never seen someone so severely hurt, and Dax had been in many fights.

Dax found it unbelievable that this man was still alive after all his injuries. He did all he could to stop the bleeding, but the rest would have to wait for Darryl to arrive.

Chapter 565

The man suddenly woke up and coughed up blood as his face turned completely white.

Shocked, Dax walked to the man and said, “My friend, you’re finally awake.”

The man looked at Dax in confusion and asked feebly, “Who...who are you?”

“My name is Dax Sanders. Don’t be afraid. I was the one that rescued you,” Dax said. “Sir, where did you come from, and what happened?”

“You rescued me? Tha-thank you, sir. I’m Callum Webb, the Sect Master of the Eternal Life Palace.

‘What? Sect Master of the Eternal Life Palace?!’ Dax thought, his mind buzzing.

He has heard that the Sect Masters of the Eternal Life Palace and Grandmaster Heaven were extremely powerful people. Who knew he would rescue the Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace?

Dax swallowed hard. He could not help but ask, “Who hurt you so badly?”

It must have taken someone monstrous to be able to hurt the powerful Sect Master of Eternal Life

Palace so badly!

Callum coughed up more blood. It was obvious he would not last much longer. He gritted his teeth, clenched his fist, and said, "The Six Orthodox Sects. They ambushed me..."

He weakly explained to Dax, though he kept stuttering, Dax understood his story.

Callum had an illegitimate daughter in Donghai City that he visited every once in a while. However, this time the Six Orthodox Sects found out about his visit, They have long considered the Eternal Life Palace an evil cult, so they could not let go of the opportunity to get rid of its Sect Master.

They gathered up all of their Elders and Heads, which was about a hundred or so, and ambushed Callum. If he were to fight them one on one, Callum had nothing to worry about, but facing a hundred skilled fighters at once was tough. He barely managed to escape after he was badly injured and passed out in the woods, where Dax rescued him.

Callum coughed more blood out after explaining everything to Dax. He was extremely emotional.

"Are you alright?" Dax asked.

"I don't have much time," Callum trembled.

Dax let out a long sigh. Though he did not know

him personally, he could see that a once strong and powerful figure was about to die. There was something tragic about that.

“Sire, come over here,” Callum said.

Dax did not think much of it as he walked over to the bed and bent down. Suddenly, Callum held his hand out and put his palm on Dax’s head.

Buzz!

Dax was frightened. He tried to avoid it, but Callum was too quick. When Callum put his palm on Dax, he thought that his brain was going to explode.

However, the instant Callum touched Dax; he felt a surge of power flowing through his body!

“Sir, don’t move. I don’t have much time left. Since you rescued me, it means that our fates are intertwined. Before I die, it’s my honor to pay you back. I’m passing on my powers to you. I hope you will do great things in the future,” Callum explained.

Buzz!

Dax felt his Internal Energy increasing exponentially! He suddenly broke through, becoming a Martial Marquis. Callum’s powers were still coursing through his body! He passed Level One Martial Marquis, then Level Two Martial

Marquis, and Level Three Martial Marquis.

Chapter 566

The surge of Internal Energy entering his body made Dax feel like he was about to explode.

Callum gritted his teeth as he transferred his lifelong cultivation to Dax. Technically, Internal Energies could not be transferred to other people, but Callum had practiced this method called the Grafting Method. This method only belonged to the Eternal Life Palace, and only the Sect Master could practice this method.

There was no other method, except the Grafting Method, to transfer their Internal Energy to another person.

Callum was well aware that he could take his last breath at any moment. Rather than letting all his powers go to waste, why not transfer it to Dax and repay him!

“Callum, no. You’re going to live! I have a brother who is skilled in elixirs; he can save you!” Dax yelled.

“There’s no use! No elixir can save me. Don’t move!” Callum scolded as he gritted his teeth.

Strong waves of Internal Energy kept surging

through Dax's body. He felt that his meridian had been baptized by pure Internal Energy. His ranks flew up!

Level Four Martial Marquis. Level Five Martial Marquis. Level One Martial Saint!

This was terrifying. He went from a Master General to a Martial Saint in such a short time!

Buzz!

Callum took a long breath and finally lifted his hand off Dax. He was already badly injured, but after transferring his entire Internal Energy to Dax, he was so emaciated it looked like he aged ten years. He looked like a man at the end of his life.

Callum looked at him and said weakly, "Your rank was pretty mediocre, so you could only reach Level One Martial Saint. There's still a portion of Internal Energy that you can't absorb yet.

"However, what you haven't absorbed will be released slowly from your energy field. In a year's time, your improvement in cultivation will be ten times more than an ordinary cultivator! If you're talented, in a year, you could become a Martial Emperor!"

Dax was surprised and overjoyed. He was extremely anxious as he could see that Callum was almost at

the end of his life.

Callum forced a smile. "I've roamed the Earth my entire life. I have no regrets now, knowing that my powers won't go to waste before I die. No regrets! Haha!"

Though he sounded weak, he spoke with pride.

Dax looked at him in pain, "What other wishes do you have left? If there's anything I can do to help, I will!"

Callum fished out a Purple Jade token and a letter.

He handed it to Dax and said, "Remember, this is my token, the symbol of Eternal Life Palace's Sect Master.

"Together with this letter, my will, you have to bring it back to Eternal Life Palace's Altar and hand it to Military Adviser Chester Wilson."

Callum's eyes were slowly closing as he struggled to keep them open. "Remember, you have to hand... hand it to... Chester. Tell him...that even though the Eternal Life Palace is considered by many as an evil cult, if there is a war one day between the New World and World Universe, don't... don't be a traitor. Must...must... not... be... New World's... snitch."

Dax kept the token and letter. He nodded and

assured Callum, “Don’t worry. I’ll hand it to him.”

Callum nodded and slowly shut his eyes.

Dax’s heart ached.

Thud!

He knelt and bowed to Callum three times.

Although he did not have a master-disciple relationship with Callum, Callum transferred all his Internal Energy. For that, he was eternally grateful.

Chapter 567

Callum's last words about if a war broke out, to never be a snitch, was said with such confidence and positivity. Dax was somehow overwhelmed as tears started streaming down his face.

Meanwhile, Darryl had finally reached the Sanders Mansion.

Once he got down from the taxi, he quickly entered the hall and yelled, "Dax! Dax!"

He rushed upstairs, pushed the door opened and was stunned at what he saw. A man was lying on the bed without any sign of life as Dax was next to him, eyes red.

'Damn, I'm too late,' thought Darryl. The man had passed away.

Darryl thought to himself, 'Wait, Dax said the person he rescued was a stranger. Why is he so sad?'

He walked over and asked, "What happened?"

Dax let out a long sigh. "A legendary hero just left us. However, those self-righteous, mediocre assh*les are still alive!"

His eyes turned red.

Darryl was slightly confused.

Dax smiled bitterly. “Darryl, take a guess who this person is.”

“Who?” Darryl asked.

Dax took a deep breath before he enunciated his words, “The Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace, Callum Webb.”

‘What? He’s the Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace?’ Darryl thought as his mind buzzed with shock.

Chester just called to say that the Sect Master might be in danger in Donghai City. Darryl found it hard to believe as the Sect Master was highly skilled. No one could really hurt him. He truly did not expect this.

Darryl came to his senses. He suddenly felt a strong aura coming off from Dax. He tensed. “F*ck me, Dax, you-you’re a Level One Martial Saint?”

‘F*ck! Level One Martial Saint?’ Darryl thought.

Dax did not seem thrilled as he smiled bitterly. “Callum transferred his Internal Energy to me.”

He explained what happened. Darryl felt pity after listening to Dax’s retelling. A legendary hero, ambushed and attacked by hundreds of people till he died. It was saddening to hear.

However, Darryl was happy about Dax’s strange

encounter. He quickly called Chester and told him the news.

After hearing that the Sect Master had passed away, Chester was silent for a while.

No longer able to hold back his sadness, he wailed, “Darryl, please get Dax to hand the letter to me. I want to know what he wrote. I’m waiting for him at the Eternal Life Palace’s Altar.”

“Sure, Chester. Don’t cry,” Darryl comforted, feeling somber too.

“Come with Dax. I caught a woman for you. You’ll be excited,” Chester said as he wiped his tears.

Chapter 568

‘What? He caught a woman for me?’ Darryl thought, stunned.

“Chester, who did you capture?” he asked, curious.

Chester took a breath, “Bro, don’t ask so many questions. You’ll know once you see her. Come quick. I’m waiting for you at Eternal Life Island.” Then he hung up.

Darryl shook his head and looked at Dax. They packed up and headed off for the Eternal Life Island.

It was noon the next day, and the weather was great. Donghai’s waters were calm and peaceful.

Not far off in the sea were many fishermen busy working.

One week ago, the Elysium Gate got rid of the evil Coastline Sect. The fishermen were so incredibly grateful; every ship had a Nine Dragons Justice flag waving proudly.

Among the many ships at sea, one particular ship stood out. It had a red sail and was larger than the other fishermen’s ships. Darryl and Dax stood shoulder to shoulder on the deck of the ship,

looking at the view. However, they were extremely solemn. Behind them was a coffin, which Dax got his men to build. In the coffin laid Callum Webb.

The Eternal Life Island was 1000 kilometers away from Donghai City, so they had to use a coffin to preserve the body for such a long journey.

The entire journey was smooth, and the sea was calm. After a day or two on the water, they could finally see a magnificent island in the middle of the sea—the Eternal Life Island.

The ship slowly came to shore, and Darryl could see there were hundreds of people standing in a line on the shore. They were followers of the Eternal Life Palace, and all of them were in uniform. The leader was a twenty-something-year-old man with his hair in a braid.

Darryl and Dax disembarked from the boat quickly as the man with the braid approached them. He greeted them politely, “Are you two Sect Master Darryl Darby and Dax Sanders?”

Darryl nodded. “Yes, we are.”

It was a long journey to the Eternal Life Palace. The man with the braid bowed. “The Military Adviser, Four Guardian Kings, and the elders are waiting for both of you at the viewing deck. Please follow me.”

The man led the way as Darryl and Dax looked at

each other and followed him.

The followers lifted the coffin with care and followed them as well.

The Eternal Life Island was delightful. Their beaches were filled with coconut trees, there were a few hills on the island, and many creatures were lazing around—it was paradise.

After fifteen minutes or so, Darryl and Dax reached the viewing deck. It was an enormous viewing deck, about three or four football fields wide. You could see far out to the sea, and it had no blind spot. If the island was under attack, you would notice it immediately.

Currently, the viewing deck had thousands of people standing in an orderly manner. All of them were followers of the Eternal Life Palace.

In front of them was a high platform, on which a Dragon Throne was placed. On the throne sat Chester, wearing a white shirt and holding a feather fan, looking regal.

On either side of Chester were the Four Guardian Kings: Golden Lion, Silver Wolf, Crimson Snake, and White Horse.

Crimson Snake and White Horse were a married couple.

Darryl immediately noticed Golden Lion, Zion Featherstone. Two petite figures stood behind him.

Chapter 569

It was Evelyn Featherstone and Circe Newman.

Darryl was surprised. He did not expect that Circe Newman would be a follower of the Eternal Life Palace. Evelyn and Circe were looking ethereal and beautiful in a plain long dress. However, all eyes were on Darryl and Dax.

Thud!

The followers put down the coffin slowly, then stood to the side.

The entire deck was totally silent. Many had heard about their Sect Master's passing.

Chester stood up, looked at Darryl, and choked, "Brother, the coffin..."

Darryl sighed, "Lies Callum Webb's body."

Chester quickly approached the coffin. His hands trembled as he slowly opened the lid.

Callum was lying in the coffin peacefully. His entire body was covered in scars, and his eyes closed. The wounds on his body were terrifying.

Thud!

Chester lost it. He knelt and wailed, “Master...”

He was crying in pain.

Chester and Callum were the closest in the sect. All these years, Callum treated Chester as his own brother. Seeing his body, Chester could not accept the fact that Callum was gone.

He cried loudly. The entire viewing deck was mourning.

Then the Four Guardian Kings and other Hall Masters knelt and cried too. They wailed, “Master...”

Their cries rang through the entire Eternal Life Island.

After a while, a woman slowly walked towards Chester and lifted him up. “Hubby, don’t cry.”

It was Chester’s wife, Adina Vega. Like her namesake, she was extremely gentle, and while she might not be beautiful, she looked kind. Her heart ached as she looked at how Chester sobbed. She hugged him.

Dax walked up to Chester as he took Callum’s token and will, he handed it to Chester. “Brother Chester, Master made me promise to hand these two things to you personally.”

Chester nodded. He took it with both hands as he

wiped his tears and went back to the platform.

He opened Callum's will and read, "I am Callum Webb, the twenty-seventh Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace, and I was ambushed by the Six Orthodox Sects. Knowing I don't have much time left, I have written my will."

Chester was still sobbing, so his voice was not loud. However, the entire deck was silent so that they could hear him clearly. All eyes were on Chester as they listened to him read their Master's will.

Chester took a long breath before he continued, "When I die, Military Adviser Chester Wilson will take over the position of Sect Master. The Four Guardian Kings and 180,000 followers are to obey Chester Wilson's orders!"

At that, Chester's eyes became red. Holding back his tears, he continued, "Finally, everyone has to obey this order! Many of you know that one day war will ignite between the New World and World Universe. Every follower of the Eternal Life Palace must not be a traitor! Do not surrender to the New World! Those that disobey my order will find that I have died in vain!

Chester choked and sobbed as he read the last sentence. "Callum..."

Thud.

Chester knelt and yelled with confidence, “Master, don’t worry. As long as I’m alive, I will not let the followers be snitches for the New World! I swear, I’ll lead the Eternal Life Palace well!”

Chapter 570

Everyone felt sad, listening to Chester's sobs.

Then, Golden Lion, Zion Featherstone, walked towards Chester. He knelt and said, "Follower Zion Featherston. All hail our Master!"

The old Sect Master had just passed away, and the new one had to take over immediately. This was the law.

"All hail our Master!"

A sea of followers knelt in unison. Only two refused to kneel as they stood there looking at Dax, filled with dissatisfaction.

The two were White Horse and Crimson Snake. The husband and wife duo were disgruntled.

White Horse took one step forward and said, "Chester, you are merely a Level One Master. With such weak powers, what right do you have to be the Sect Master?"

The crowd gasped.

Chester's face flushed as he could not offer a retort. He was of a low cultivator rank, yet he was honored with the Military Adviser, a rank above the four

Guardian Kings. White Horse and Crimson Snake were always unhappy about this.

However, Chester did not expect that they would defy him so openly in public in front of everyone!

The atmosphere became heavy and awkward suddenly.

Slap!

Zion stood up and slapped his chair.

“White Horse, Crimson Snake! What do both of you mean? It was written clearly on Master Webb’s will to let the Military Adviser be the Sect Master. The Military Adviser is wise and sensible. What’s wrong with him being the Sect Master?” he roared.

“Haha! Zion, stop with the act! Let me ask you, so what if he’s wise? His powers are weak. What right does he have to be Sect Master? I disagree with him being our Sect Master!” Crimson Snake laughed coldly.

Crimson Snake took a hard look at Chester. She rushed toward him and lifted her arm as she sneered, “If Chester can block my slap, I’ll hail him as my Master!”

Everyone was stunned as they did not expect her to hit Chester! The Four Guardian Kings were all Level Five Martial Marquis! If Crimson Snake slapped

Chester, he would die.

Chester was astounded too. Crimson Snake's speed was too fast; he could not avoid it.

Just as he was about to get slapped, someone rushed forward and blocked him. It was Darryl. He was not going to let anyone bully Chester.

“Do you want to die?” Crimson Snake yelled. She was angry that someone would block her move, so she redirected her slap towards Darryl.

Darryl was fearless. He harnessed his energy field and lifted his hands to meet with her slap.

Slap!

Their two palms met, and Darryl felt a huge force overpower him. He was forced to retreat a few steps back as he spat out blood.

Crimson Snake had the upper hand. After all, Darryl would definitely lose a little when fighting with a Level Five Martial Marquis.

“Darryl!” Dax yelled. He was infuriated that Darryl was hit. He rushed forward and slapped Crimson Snake square on the face.

Slap!

Dax used his entire force, which sent Crimson Snake flying twenty meters away and caused her to

cough out blood.

Dax did not care if it was a man or woman; no one can bully Darryl! After hitting her, Dax was still angry, so he walked towards White Horse and slapped him too.

White Horse was caught off guard. He wanted to block the slap, but fighting against a Level One Martial Saint was pointless.

Slap!

Chapter 571

Dax slapped White Horse, sending him flying far away till he landed beside his wife, Crimson Snake.

Everyone gasped.

This was the difference between a Level One Martial Saint and a Level Five Martial Marquis.

Ka-cha!

An ax appeared in Dax's hand. He slowly approached White Horse and Crimson Snake. "You two disloyal traitors. Master Webb had just passed away. We barely got to avenge him, yet you two have already disobeyed his will. I am going to kill you two as a sacrifice to him in heaven!"

White Horse sweated profusely; the arrogance he had previously was all gone.

Thud!

White Horse and Crimson Snake immediately knelt and begged for forgiveness, "Sorry. We're sorry. It was a lapse of judgment. We will be loyal to Master Chester Wilson from now on..."

White Horse was almost in tears. He never expected Dax to be Level One Martial Saint!

Dax harrumphed without saying a word as he turned to look at Chester.

White Horse and Crimson Snake were not idiots. They immediately groveled and cried out, “All Hail, our Master! Please forgive us!”

Chester drew a deep breath and responded, “It’s fine, get up. Today is the first—and the last—that you’ll do this. I hope you take this as a warning. One more act of betrayal and your heads will be off.”

To be fair, the husband and wife should have been killed as a warning to all for rebelling against him. However, killing another two Guardian Kings would weaken the sect’s powers since Master Webb had just passed on.

Most importantly, Chester still had a hard time processing Callum Webb’s death. He did not muster the energy to deal with this.

At that, White Horse let out a sigh of relief. He wiped the sweat off his forehead. “Thank you, Master,” he exclaimed.

White Horse and Crimson Snake then stood up and returned to their positions, not daring to say another word.

Chester shook his head. “Golden Lio, Dax, and Darryl are my brothers. Please arrange their

accommodation and let them rest,” He instructed Zion. “The rest, you may leave. I want to be alone in peace.”

“Yes, Master.” They answered in unison and left.

The view deck was emptied in a short while, except for Chester and his wife, Adina.

He walked toward the coffin and knelt again. “Master, don’t worry. I will lead the sect well. I won’t disappoint you. Farewell, farewell...” Chester sobbed.

Adina could not do anything but pat his back and stand by his side.

In the afternoon, Chester went to the back of the hill. He dug up a grave with his bare hands until they bled to bury Callum’s coffin.

On the other side of the hill, Dax and Darryl were in their rooms. They did not rest much during the journey, so Darryl fell asleep immediately.

He slept for a while until he heard a knock on his door. Darryl opened his eyes.

“Who is it?” he answered.

A sect follower declared politely, “Master Darby, our Master previously captured a woman. He said he wanted to give her to you. I have brought the

woman here.”

Chapter 572

Darryl stood up quickly. He recalled Chester previously saying that he captured a woman to be given to him. Now that the woman was here, Darryl became curious. He got down from his bed and opened the door.

He was stunned. A follower was standing in front of him, and behind the follower was a woman of a great body. She was tied up.

The follower pushed the woman into the room and took his leave.

Darryl was floored. The woman turned out to be Megan Castello!

Two days ago, Chester heard from Zion that the Emei sect's Senior Sister Megan Castello stabbed Darryl with her sword at the Lion Slaughtering Conference, nearly killing him.

Chester was livid. He ordered his men to capture Megan, and they had finally caught her. Chester wanted it to be a surprise for Darryl.

Darryl looked at Megan awkwardly and asked, "How ... how were you captured?"

Megan did not say anything but stared intensely at

him in rage.

After a minute or so, Megan laughed coldly and snarled, “How was I captured? I should be the one asking you that question, Darryl. You’re a disgusting piece of filth!”

“What did I do?” Darryl asked.

Megan glared at him and scoffed, “My master said that you joined the Eternal Life Palace and killed your grandfather. I defended you, saying that you weren’t that sort of person! But now, I know I was wrong! You really joined the Eternal Life Palace! You’re a failure!”

Megan gritted her teeth. She realized that she made the right decision to steal his Celestial Silkworm Armor and Supreme Mystery Scripture. Such rare and precious items should not be in the hands of trash!

“Yes, I’ve joined the Eternal Life Palace,” he sighed. “So what? Do you have a misunderstanding about them?”

Other people have said that the Eternal Life Palace sect was terrible and only did evil things. Darryl did not think so. Every follower lived honest lives—Callum, Chester, Zion, and even Caelan were all loyal and just.

Megan was agitated. “Darryl, you joined the Eternal

Life Palace! You're scum! They are evil! Aren't you afraid of karma? Don't you worry that your parents will be punished?"

He was equally aggravated as his mind buzzed. "Megan, do you think the Six Orthodox sects are any better? At the Lion Slaughtering Conference, your master used our relationship—knowing that I won't fight you—and made you stab me. Is this the work of a good and just sect?"

Darryl was livid. He pointed at Megan and yelled, "Also, I was slandered by my own family, who said that I defiled my siblings and killed my grandfather. Abbess Mother Serendipity did not even bother to find out the truth before trying to murder me. Is this how a good sect works?"

Other than that, Leroy Henderson—the Sect Master of Kunlun—had crossed over to the New World. He learned the Dark Method and absorbed Yvonne's essence. Was this how good and just sects worked? Though Monica warned Darryl to never tell another person about this, Darryl was angry at the mere thought of it.

Those self-righteous sects acted all high and mighty and tried to get rid of evil sects. What a bunch of nonsense!

"Don't tell me about this." Megan's face flushed as

she retorted in disgust. She did not want to hear about this.

“Darryl, I will never believe you again. You’re filth and scum! Also, what do you want to do with me by capturing me here? Are you using me to threaten my master? Dream on! Just kill me.”

She spat at Darryl.

Chapter 573

Darryl was furious. Just as he was about to speak, a voice came from the door.

“Master Darby, our Master is inviting you and Dax to dine with him in the main hall.”

“I’ll be right there,” Darryl replied.

Darryl took a deep breath. He looked at Megan and explained, “I admit, Chester and I are close. I’ll admit that I am also a Hall Master of the Eternal Life Palace, but we never did any evil or harm anyone. We lived an honest life. You’ll sleep here tonight. You’ll take the bed, and I’ll take the floor. I’ll untie you when I get back later. Dax and I are leaving for Donghai City tomorrow, so we’ll bring you along.”

Darryl walked out of the room.

“Darryl, you bastard...”

Darryl could hear Megan’s cries. Darryl loathed Abbess Mother Serendipity. Chester must have captured Megan to blackmail her, and he definitely would not let her go that easily. Darryl ignored her as he made his way to the main hall.

The main hall was magnificent. All the furniture

was made out of Golden-thread Nanmu.

As he entered the main hall, he could hear Dax and Chester chatting and laughing. They already started drinking.

“I did not know Brother Dax was so powerful! I admire you!” Chester laughed and lifted the glass to him.

“Brother Chester, stop praising me. My ranks were all thanks to Master Webb.” Dax downed his glass of wine.

They already had a few drinks when they saw Darryl. Chester waved at Darryl and asked, “Darryl, why were you so slow? Come here quick.”

Chester felt much better. Although Callum’s death was devastating, he still had to continue living. If he could not get a grip of himself, how could he lead the Eternal Life Palace?

Darryl and Dax came from far away. Of course, he had to prepare a feast for them, especially since he had not seen Darryl in a long time. They had to drink till they dropped.

Usually, when there were guests, it was a norm for them to arrange courtesans. However, they forewent those customs since Callum Webb had just passed.

Darryl still laughed and sat with them at the table, even though he was furious about Megan. He was about to take a sip when he realized something odd about Chester. His powers increased!

“Chester, are you Level Five Master now?” Darryl was stunned.

What happened? How did he level up so fast?

During the day, he was just a Level One Master. However, in a few hours, he rose four levels.

Chester smiled. “Haha! Brother, let me tell you. Here in the Eternal Life Palace, we have a miraculous method called the Grafting Method. Only Sect Masters can practice this manual. Once you master this, your cultivation level will rise fast.”

He chuckled in self-deprecation. “However, due to my mediocrity, practicing the Grafting Method alone could not help me rise up four levels in half a day. It was mainly due to Master Webb. He left me many precious herbs. I ate plenty of it just now, hence why I leveled up so quickly.”

Darryl nodded.

“By the way, Darryl, have you met the woman I captured? Haha!” he laughed. “Zion said that she stabbed you during the Lion Slaughtering Conference. I captured her here today, so it’s up to

you how you want to deal with her. Were you surprised?”

Darryl smiled bitterly and replied, “Thank you for your kindness.”

Bloody hell. It was a surprise, indeed, but Megan’s words really annoyed him. Darryl was furious at the thought of it.

Chapter 574

The thought of Megan still made Darryl angry. However, he wanted to have a good time with his brothers. He put Megan in the back of his mind.

“Drink up, drink up!” Dax lifted his wine glass and shouted, “You all have to promise not to force the alcohol out with Internal Energy! Then, we’ll see who has the worst tolerance!”

“Who’s afraid of you? Drink!” They clinked their glasses and downed the wine. They did not have enough wine, so they swapped their glasses for bowls instead. They drank bowl after bowl of wine.

It was said that men bonded through alcohol. That was the truth.

They did not know how much they had drunk. Suddenly, Chester lifted his bowl as he stood up and declared, “Darryl, Dax, it is my honor to have known you two. Shall we officially become sworn brothers?”

“Yes!” They looked at each other and laughed.

Dax slammed the table. “Brother Chester, I have the same thought! Haha!”

Ever since Callum Web transferred all his Internal

Energy to Dax, he had a sudden affinity to the Eternal Life Palace. After he came to Eternal Life Island and met Chester, Golden Lion, and the others, his fondness for the sect increased. These men were honest and just!

He longed to form a relationship with them. When Chester wanted to become sworn brothers, he naturally agreed!

Darryl was overjoyed too. He stood up and filled their bowls with wine. He slashed his index finger with his Blood Drinking Sword.

Shing!

A drop of blood dripped into the wine.

To become sworn brothers, they would have to drink each other's blood in wine.

Chester looked at the two men, smiling back at them. They proceeded to do the same, dripping their blood into the wine.

Thud.

The three of them knelt and bowed to the sky to complete the swearing-in.

“Lord on high, today, I, Chester Wilson.”

“I, Darryl Darby.”

“And I, Dax Sanders.”

“We agree to help each other through thick and thin. The lord as our witness, we agree to become sworn brothers!” They yelled proudly in unison.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

They bowed three times to the sky and helped each other up.

According to their age, Chester was the eldest. Darryl was the middle, and Dax was the youngest.

They were used to their previous ways of addressing each other. Suddenly having to change their names to ‘eldest brother’ or ‘second brother’ was slightly awkward, so they stuck to their old ways.

Back at the table, the others were extremely excited. They drank non-stop.

After lots of wine, Darryl complained lightly. “Brother Chester, why are all the dishes vegetarian?”

After lots of alcohol—of course—they would want to eat meat.

Chester laughed. “You two should know that tonight’s dishes were all made by my wife! She’s a vegetarian. She feels that eating them equals killing them, so she does not let me eat meat. I hope you two might understand! Haha! My wife knew that

you were coming, so she insisted on cooking for the both of you. I could not even stop her! So, I hope you bear with me! Haha!”

At the mention of his wife, Adina, Chester’s face was filled with joy. Chester really loved his wife.

“Ah, so that’s why,” Darryl laughed. Darryl had a great first impression of Chester’s wife. Adina was a motherly woman with a gentle expression. Anyone could see that she was an exceptionally kind woman.

Truth to be told, Adina’s cooking was excellent. It tasted amazing! Chester must have done something great in his past life that he could marry a woman like that. ①

Chester smiled. “By the way, I did not get to properly introduce Adina to you this afternoon. I’ll get her to come to meet you all.”

Chester instructed a maidservant. “Go to the kitchen and see if Adina is almost done. Get her to come to see my brothers.”

“Yes, Master.” The maidservant agreed and quickly left the hall.

Dax laughed. He asked Chester, “Brother Chester, how did you and Adina meet?”

Chester took a gulp and gushed, “Adina and I were schoolmates. She was the daughter of a wealthy

family. I was just a poor student back then, and I had not joined the Eternal Life Palace. We were desk mates, and our feelings grew over time.”

Chester smiled bitterly. “Though we were still students, I was from a poor family. How could I be with a wealthy heiress? She was kicked out of her family because of me. I was guilty, and I felt that I did not give her a comfortable life. When I joined the sect, she accompanied me to this island, so I owe a lot to her. Hence, why I want to love her back as much as I can.”

At that, Chester smiled happily.

Dax and Darryl looked at each other and smiled. Adina finally could reap her rewards, now that Chester is the Sect Master. He looked over one hundred and eighty thousand followers.

Chapter 575

In the kitchen, Adina wore an apron as she was busy chopping carrots. There were hints of sweat on her beautiful face. She knew that Chester wanted to treat his brothers to dinner, so she had to serve them well.

A maidservant approached her and said, “Mistress, Master wants you to join them for dinner.”

Adina smiled and nodded. “Okay, you head over first. I’ll come when I finish this dish.”

The maidservant nodded. She took out a handkerchief and dabbed the sweat off Adina’s face before she left.

Ten minutes later, the dish was finally done. She carefully held the plate in her hands and headed toward the main hall where Chester was.

She was halfway there when she heard a woman’s cries coming from Darryl’s room. She stopped dead in her tracks.

‘Wasn’t Darryl drinking with Chester and Dax? Why were there sounds of a woman coming from his room?’ thought Adina.

She was curious, so she pushed the door open. She

was stunned by what she saw—a beautiful woman tied up on a chair, crying terribly. It was Megan Castello.

“Miss, what happened?” Adina put her dish down and approached her.

Adina was a kind-hearted soul, so she could not bear to see people cry. Seeing Megan completely helpless broke her heart.

Megan was frightened when Adina entered. Her sobs turned into sniffs.

“Who are you?” Megan asked with red eyes.

Adina smiled. “My name is Adina. Sister, why are you tied up?”

Megan gritted her teeth and whispered, “I have no idea, I was captured. Maybe because I am a follower of Emei, they want to use me to threaten my Master. Can... can you release me?”

Megan had no idea who she was but seeing how kind she looked, she pleaded unconsciously.

Megan did not have much hope. However, she was surprised when Adina untied her.

“Okay, I’ve untied you. Don’t cry,” Adina said softly. “Miss, the followers in Eternal Life Palace never caused trouble. How could we use you to

blackmail your master? I've untied you. Follow me. I'll lead you out of the Eternal Life Island."

Megan was stunned, staring blankly at Adina.

She was letting her go? Impossible! Something must be up. The bunch of scum, how could they let her escape?

"Miss?" Adina asked as she left the room. She urged, "Follow me. I'll bring you out of the Eternal Life Island."

Megan frowned. Even though she was suspicious, she still followed Adina.

A few minutes later, they passed a small winding road downhill. "Miss, follow the road, and you'll reach the sea," she instructed. "There will be many fishermen boats, just take any one of them, and you'll be able to leave." At that, Adina turned and left.

Chester and the rest were still waiting for her. Also, the dish she prepared was probably cold by then and needed to be reheated.

Megan stood still and bit her lip. Was she really going to let her go?

"May I ask who you are? If you let me go, won't the Sect Master blame you?" Megan could not help but ask.

Adina smiled lightly. "Don't worry, my husband is

the new Sect Master. How could he blame me? I'm his wife. Just go, miss."

"You!" Megan was furious. "You're the Sect Master's wife?"

"Yes," Adina smiled.

"You scum! No one in the Eternal Life Palace is good!" Megan yelled.

She continued, "You're the wife of the Sect Master. How good could you be? You're letting me go on purpose! What are you planning on doing? All of the Eternal Life Palace members should die!"

Megan fished a long sword and stabbed Adina.

The sword went through Adina's right chest.

Adina was not a cultivator. She felt her chest become cold as blood spread throughout her clothes.

She never dreamed that doing good would get her killed.

Megan clenched her teeth as she pulled the sword out. She looked at Adina coldly and shrieked, "You let me go on purpose! Why? Tell me!"

Thud.

Adina could not answer her. She felt weak and fell to

the floor. The sword had punctured her heart.

Chapter 576

“Say, what are you up to? Why are you letting me go?” Megan clenched her jaw and kicked Adina.

Adina was lying on the floor, her breath weak. There was blood splattered everywhere. Megan’s kick made her bleed more.

“The Eternal Life Palace is evil! Find a better man in your next life. Don’t marry filth anymore,” Megan spat coldly.

Seeing how Adina could not reply, she kept her sword and ran downhill.

She did not regret killing Adina. She was angry that she was caught, and there was no one else to take out her anger on. Adina was the wife of the Sect Master. Killing her was getting rid of evil. Adina deserved it!

In the main hall, the three brothers drank lots of wine. There were many empty jars on the table.

Darryl’s phone rang all of a sudden. It was from Zephyr Dixon.

Darryl was surprised. Zephyr would not have called him out of the blue. Was Elysium Gate be in

them? I don't think Leroy Henderson would give it to us."

Darryl's face darkened. He clenched his fist and shouted, "We will have to make him give it to us, no matter what!" He hung up.

Darryl's fist was clenched tight. He never expected that the only way to save Yvonne was with Kunlun's ultimate treasure—the Phoenix Pill.

It looked like he would have to fight with the Kunlun sect!

Dax and Chester looked at each other after they realized that Darryl's mood was off. "Darryl, what happened? Who called?" they asked.

Darryl sighed and smiled bitterly. "To tell you all the truth, a woman I love was badly injured while trying to save me. Her essence was absorbed by Leroy Henderson from the Kunlun sect..." Darryl spent the next few minutes retelling the story.

Slam.

When he was done, Chester slammed his fist on the table and swore, "Bloody f*ck! That bastard, Leroy! He's a pest! I have long hated him! Who knew he would be so despicable to hurt my brother's woman."

Chapter 577

A self-proclaimed righteous sect learned the evil Dark Method. How dare they still pretend to be self-righteous?

Dax was enraged as well, clenching his teeth. Darryl nodded, somewhat touched by their reactions. He was extremely fortunate to have met these two brothers in his life.

“By the way, where is Adina?” Chester frowned as he asked the maidservant.

The maidservant quickly answered, “Master, mistress said she would come after she finished the last dish. She should have finished long ago. Should I go call for her again?”

“Don’t need to rush her. We’ve also finished eating.” Chester waved in dismissal. Adina must be exhausted from preparing a feast.

Darryl nodded and smiled. “Yes, let her rest. She has worked hard hosting us!”

They clinked their glasses again. It was almost ten at night by the time they decided to call it a night. Chester was drunk.

“I can’t take it anymore...” Chester mumbled. He

did not drink much. However, today was a special occasion as they became sworn brothers. Of course, he indulged in drinking.

“Haha! Brother Chester, your alcohol tolerance is weak!” Dax laughed. However, he was just as drunk as Chester. He could not stand properly either.

“Darryl, Dax, wait for me. I’ll practice my alcohol tolerance. I’ll outdrink all of you in the future!” Chester laughed. He put his arms around Darryl’s shoulders.

“Let’s go, brothers. I’ll send you back to your rooms.”

They had never-ending things to talk about on the way back. Once they were returned, they were sure they would continue chatting for a while.

Dax laughed out loud. “Brother Chester, the Eternal Life Paradise is amazing, except for one caveat. There’s no electricity! It’s dark at night, so we would be talking in the dark later! Haha!”

The three of them walked together to the backyard.

It was late, and the sky was dotted with stars.

They came upon a small road as they were chatting happily when Dax suddenly stopped in his tracks. He pointed at a bush not far from him and exclaimed, “Chester, Darryl, it looks like someone

is lying there! F*ck, am I hallucinating?” Dax rubbed his eyes.

He was not wrong. There was someone there!

Chester and Darryl looked to where Dax was pointing. They were astonished.

A woman’s body laid there, still wearing an apron.

Chester frowned as he quickly approached the body. He was shocked to find out that it was Adina.

There was blood everywhere, and her chest had a gaping stab wound. She was long dead.

“Adina...”

Chapter 578

“Adina... Adina...”

Chester wailed as he hugged Adina tightly, tears falling non-stop. It was heart-wrenching.

Chester already had a hard time accepting Callum Webb's death. After becoming sworn brothers with Dax and Darryl, he cheered up but seeing Adina's dead body was another bullet straight to the heart.

“Adina, don't scare me. I beg of you to open your eyes. Please...” Chester's voice was hoarse. He was trembling.

Darry and Dax's mind went blank. They instantly sobered up.

Chester mentioned that Adina lived on the Eternal Life Island most of the time. She was a vegetarian who would not even step on an ant. She was the kindest soul with no enemies. Furthermore, she was the Sect Master's wife. Who would do this to her?

Dax and Darryl looked at each other with anger in their eyes. Chester had just mentioned how he and Adina came a long way and how he was guilty that he could not give her a better life, so he spoiled her as much as he could. Who knew Adina would be

found lying in a pool of her blood!

“Adina, I beg of you, don’t leave me here! Please, please open your eyes! Please!” Chester sobbed. His cracked voice rang through the night.

“Chester, it seems like there are writings on the rock!” Darryl exclaimed.

Next to Adina, there was a rock about half a meter high. Three sentences were written with blood. It was evident that Adina wrote that before she died.

Chester looked at the rock and wailed even harder.

It wrote, “Marrying you. No regrets. Let’s meet in the next life.”

Chester fell on to the rock and sobbed hard. Adina knew she had not much time left, so she wrote her final words for Chester.

Chester clenched his fist. He punched the rock and yelled, “Adina, I need you back! How could you die? I have not taken you to see maple leaves. I’ve not brought you to snowy mountains, and we have not been to so many places! How could you die? I won’t allow you to die! How could you? Do you hear me?!”

Tears kept falling down his cheeks. Chester had no idea how long he cried until a drop of blood fell from his eyes onto Adina. He was so grief-stricken that he cried blood!

Darryl clenched his fist, his heart aching for Chester. How much despair and agony was Chester in that he cried blood?

Hearing Chester's sobs, many followers and servants rushed over. They were stunned and helpless when they saw Adina lying lifeless in his arms.

Adina was a gentle soul. The servants mourned as well since she treated them well.

“Master, look!”

A maidservant found a jade pendant in the bush.

Chester picked the pendant up. His eyes turned red when he saw the word ‘Emei’ carved into it. This was the token of the Emei sect!

Chapter 579

This needed no thought—someone from Emei must have killed Adina and accidentally dropped her jade pendant! There was only one woman from the Emei sect in the entire Eternal Life Island—Megan Castello!

Darryl took a deep breath. He had seen this pendant when he entered Megan's house the first time. She told Darryl that she was from the Emei sect.

“Go and see if that woman, Megan Castello, is still in the room. Go!” Chester yelled.

“Yes... yes, master!” A few maidservants quickly ran off. They returned not long after.

They explained timidly, “Master, that Emei woman has freed herself and left.”

Chester trembled in anger. “Emei! I will make sure all of your followers die together with my wife!” he yelled.

Loud thunder rumbled, and heavy rain poured from the sky.

Chester hugged Adina tightly. He stood up slowly and walked toward the backyard.

Megan escaped Eternal Life Island on a fishermen's ship. Riding on the vast ocean, she sat on the deck, looking determinedly at the Eternal Life Island, which was gradually getting smaller by the minute. She did not regret stabbing Adina at all. The followers of the Eternal Life Palace were evil people who deserved death.

Megan took a deep breath. "Darryl, goodbye!" she muttered.

"Even though I stole your armor and manual, you are not a good person. I took them away from you so that you would not create more trouble. It has always been good versus evil since the dawn of time. You're with the Eternal Life Palace, and I'm from the Emei sect. We shall not have anything to do with each other in the future," she mumbled to herself. Her expression was determined, yet she felt a little melancholic.

Finally, after a long time, the ship docked at Donghai City's port. Once she alighted, she immediately hailed a taxi to her master.

Darby Mansion's backyard.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was sitting in the pavilion in the Darby Mansion's backyard. She had a letter from the Emei Sect Master in her hand.

Previously, Elysium Gate's Indomitable Darby used

Weak Poison to capture followers from the Six orthodox sects. It enraged them. They gathered together in Donghai City to discuss how to destroy Elysium Gate once and for all.

However, the Emei Sect Master could not attend. She needed to cultivate in seclusion as it was a crucial moment for her. She instructed Abbess Mother Serendipity to go on her behalf.

“Master...”

Megan quickly entered the backyard. Megan was surprised and overwhelmed, quickly burying herself in her master’s arms.

“Master, I thought I would not be able to see you again!” Megan cried, looking jaded and tired. The Abbess’ heart ached for her. She patted Megan’s head and asked, “Megan, what happened? Tell me, where have you been for the past two days? Were you busy at work?”

“No, I resigned a long time ago.” Megan bit her lip.

Upon mentioning that she was captured on the Eternal Life Island, Megan was overcome with emotion. She cried and retold her account of how she was captured by the Eternal Life Palace sect.

When she finished, she wiped her tears and bit her lip. “Master, you were right. Darryl does have a

relationship with the Eternal Life Palace! No wonder he saved the Golden Lion during the Slaughtering Lion Conference. He's scum!" she cried.

Chapter 580

As she heard Megan berate Darryl, she smiled. “You’ve finally come to your senses. I am happy. I have told you before that Darryl is a piece of filth.”

Abbess Mother Serendipity frowned. “One Darby is an Eternal Life Palace member, another is Elysium Gate’s Indomitable Darby. These two Darbys are pests of our world.”

Megan did not say anything, only nodding in agreement.

The Abbess patted Megan’s shoulder. “The Eternal Life Palace needs to be destroyed, of course, but we have an even more important matter now. The Six orthodox sects have gathered at Hexad’s to discuss the Judgement Day plan. Come with me tomorrow.”

Judgement Day? Megan was confused.

Abbess Mother Serendipity grinned. “The Judgement Day plan is a scheme to destroy Elysium Gate. Its Sect Master, Indomitable Darby, has insulted the Six sects. We have to get our revenge by destroying their sect!”

The most humiliating thing was that Indomitable Darby forced her to get married to Wudang Sect’s

Master Leonard at the Wishing Star Tower, right in front of their peers.

The thought of it enraged her! She had to kill Indomitable Darby with her own hands!

“Master, I’ll follow along to discuss how to get rid of Elysium Gate,” Megan declared.

Abbess Mother Serendipity beamed with joy. “Megan, you are Emei’s Senior Sister. You must remember, you have to know the good from evil, and always stand for the good,” she advised. “The future of the Emei sect is on you and your peers’ shoulders.”

Megan was touched that Abbess Mother Serendipity rooted for her. “Don’t worry, Master. I will do my absolute best to make the Emei sect proud!” she cheered excitedly.

Back on the Eternal Life Island, Darryl and Dax did not sleep the entire night.

Chester hugged Adina one last time before he buried her at the back of the hill. He slept in front of her grave the entire night.

In just one day, Callum Webb and Adina had left him. He was in total despair. It rained the entire night. The following morning, the servants found him completely passed out with a high fever at the

back of the hill.

They quickly flagged down two doctors to treat Chester. He woke up after they gave him some medicine.

Dax and Darryl visited Chester. He looked tired and haggard as he laid on the bed. Their hearts ached for him as they could only bid their farewell to Chester and leave Eternal Life Island. They initially agreed that the three of them were to go to Donghai City to get the Phoenix Pill from Leroy Henderson. However, after Adina's death, Chester was in despair. Darryl did not dare bring it up again.

Before leaving the island, Darryl boarded the huge ship and sat on the deck. He made a phone call to Zephyr.

Zephyr answered politely, "Master."

Darryl let out a long breath. He asked, "Where is the Kunlun Sect Master now?"

Zephyr answered immediately, "Master, Leroy Henderson has been in Hexad's the past few days."

Before Darryl could hang up, Zephyr added, "Master, yesterday, I led a bunch of followers and destroyed the Spirit Flame Sect. They were the scum of Serene City, doing evil and causing chaos! The Hall Master was a pervert and a gambling addict

who did many degrading acts and extorted people for money. So, I killed him on the spot. I could only let you know now since we spent the last night cleaning up the place. Please forgive me!”

“What did you do wrong?” Darryl smiled. “Remember, next time, all acts of purging evil don’t have to go through me. Do it boldly!”

“Yes, Master!” Zephyr answered politely.

Darryl and Zephyr got up to speed with each others’ situations before they hung up.

Chapter 581

Not long after, Dax's face was filled with joy as he stepped out from the ship cabin.

Darryl could feel that Dax's energy had gotten stronger again.

“Dax, have you upgraded to a Level Two Martial Saint?” He asked excitedly.

Dax nodded. That was right—ever since he left the Eternal Life Island, he had the feeling that he would upgrade soon. After a short cultivation, his energy improved again and was elevated to a Level Two Martial Saint!

When Callum transferred his internal energy to Dax, Callum had told him that he would experience a vast improvement in himself over the next year, much faster than an average human. Dax did not expect he would be upgraded to Level Two Martial Saint in such a short time!

“Darryl, did you manage to find out where the Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy Henderson, was hiding?” Dax asked with a hearty laugh.

Dax was angry about the incident with Yvonne. He wanted to get the Phoenix Pill for Darryl no matter

what.

Darryl smiled and replied, “He is at The Hexad School.”

“Let’s go then.” Dax put his arms around Darryl’s shoulder as both smiled at each other while looking towards the sea.

Both students’ orientation and graduation ceremony were held in the Hexad School’s hall.

However, although the hall was filled, none of them were students. The thousands of people seated in the hall were elite members of the community. All the sects and families were gathered there to discuss the plan to destroy the Elysium Gate!

What? The Spirit Flame Sect from the Serene City was conquered by the Elysium Gate too? It started to become chaotic, with everyone having their own conversations.

The Spirit Flame Sect was a rather established and influential Sect in Serene City.

At that moment, Jean from the younger generation of the Emei Sect whispered something to Abbess Mother Serendipity.

In an instant, Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled. “Everyone, do not be worried. I have just received the news that the Elysium Gate members retreated

to their headquarters after conquering the Spirit Flame Sect. Their headquarters is located at the previous Darby residence. We can go to their headquarters and settle this once and for all!”

“Great!”

Everyone smiled excitedly when they heard about the plan.

Bang!

Suddenly, someone kicked open the hall’s main door, causing a loud boom!

Two people swiftly rushed into the hall.

It was Darryl and Dax.

They both looked at each other, completely stunned.

Sh*t! What was going on?

Both of them were there after the Phoenix Pill.

They thought that only Kunlun Sect members were there. They did not expect to open the door to find all the Six Sects, and a dozen over other smaller sects—like the Beggars’ Sect and Island of Peach Blossom—there too!

Everyone in the hall was stunned too.

What were the two guys there for? When Darryl crashed the wedding ceremony earlier, Abbess

Mother Serendipity had severed Darryl's nerve and pulse. Everyone heard about the news! However, everyone could feel Darryl's energy. He did not become disabled—he had upgraded to a Martial Saint!

Both of them—a useless man and a brainless rich guy belonged to the same kind.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stood and pointed at Darryl, “Darryl, you useless man! How dare you appear here?” She looked around and exclaimed, “You all may not have heard, but Darryl has joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect. Ask my student Megan, if you don't believe me.”

Chapter 582

“Wow!” Everyone started discussing among themselves.

Did Darryl join the Eternal Life Palace Sect? How could he, when he was such a useless man?

Everyone looked towards Abbess Mother Serendipity and Megan.

Megan nodded. She bit her teeth and stepped forward. “My master is right. Darryl joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect. Just two days ago, I was abducted by their followers. I saw Darryl there, but not as an ordinary member—he was the Hall Master.”

“Nonsense!”

Graham Potter—the Hexad School’s principal—slammed the table. He stood up to point at Darryl and shouted, “You are such rubbish! How could the Hexad School have a student like you?”

“Don’t speak like an idiot, just get rid of him since he is here!”

“Yes, he deserved to be killed since he can’t differentiate the good from the bad!”

Everyone pointed at Darryl, scolding and cursing at him!

Darryl ignored all the scolding. He was just there to get the Phoenix Pill from Leroy! Darryl became too furious when he looked at Megan, and his body trembled. “Megan, you killed lady at the Eternal Life Island, is that right?”

Darryl was very emotional when he remembered how heartbroken Chester was. He clutched his fist tightly.

“That’s right. It was me,” Megan replied coldly. “That lady claimed that she was the new Cult Mistress. I killed her for the benefit of the community.”

Until then, Megan did not regret what she had done.

Darryl felt as if his heart was ripped out of his chest. “Who gave you the right to kill her? What right do you have?” he shouted.

“She is the Cult Mistress of the Eternal Life Palace. She deserved to die!” Megan bit her lips, “You may ask the opinion of all the elders here, did I do anything wrong?”

“Megan, you did the right thing!”

“Yes, you are doing a favor for the community.!”

After hearing what everyone had said, Dax could not stand it anymore. He exploded, “All of you claim to be honorable, but haha, what a joke! You killed someone, and you claimed it was for the benefit of the community. What a great excuse—bullsh*t! You are nothing more than a bunch of devilish people.”

Wow! Everyone was furious!

Many of them stood and scolded while pointing at Dax.

“What did you just say?”

“Who do you think you are to comment about us? Do you want to die too?”

“Darryl, I was wrong to think that you are a good person,” she scoffed, “now I know what a devil you are!”

Darryl replied, “Megan, the feeling is mutual. I was blind before this. I will never forgive you for murdering Adina in my entire life. I shall deal with you about this later.”

Darryl turned and glared at Leroy.

“Leroy, I am here for just one purpose. Hand over the Phoenix Pill, and I will forget about the past. Otherwise, it would be a life and death matter

between us!”

What?

Was he threatening the Kunlun Sect Master?

Everyone was in shock. They thought that they had misheard Darryl's words.

Leroy chuckled, “Young man, how arrogant. Do you know about the Phoenix Pill? It is the Kunlun Sect's treasure that has been passed on for thousands of generations. You were lucky to be able to escape the other time. Today, since you are here, I shall capture you to be handed to Abbess Mother Serendipity. You want the Phoenix Pill? You must be looking for death!”

Chapter 583

“Sect Master Henderson, don’t waste your time on him. Catch him!” Abbess Mother Serendipity snarled. She leaned forward and leaped towards Darryl with her sword in her hands. “If we are not able to capture him alive, kill him!”

Just as she finished her words, Abbess Mother Serendipity’s sword had reached Darryl’s chest!

Darryl held his fist tight and released his anger. The blood drinking sword appeared right at that moment across his chest, blocking the attack from Abbess Mother Serendipity!

Cling!

When the two swords met, it caused a loud crash. Darryl recoiled a few steps back from the blade as fresh blood sprayed out of his mouth!

Although Darryl’s power had reached Level One Martial Saint, he was still not a match for Abbess Mother Serendipity. She was a Level Five Martial Saint for a few years. Her power was way beyond Darryl!

Bang!

Abbess Mother Serendipity raised her arms slowly,

and her intense internal energy engulfed the entire hall!

“Ten Miles Green Lily!”

Abbess Mother Serendipity said the four words slowly.

The next moment, the air in front of her was divided. Hundreds of green lilies appeared, completely surrounding her. All the lilies were generated from her internal energy.

Swish!

A few hundred green lilies started trembling in just a short moment with all the petals dropping, floating in the air. Each of the petals transformed into a sharp blade. Thousands of blades flew towards Darryl.

“Die, you monster!” Abbess Mother Serendipity shouted coldly.

Swish! Swish!

The thousands of sharp blades sped towards Darryl.

Darryl was stunned. That was the first time he had witnessed the special technique of Abbess Mother Serendipity. He had never thought that it would be so dark!

In the blink of an eye, Darryl was sweating

profusely with his sweat dripping all over!

There was no way he could hide from the thousands of blades that came from all directions.

“Darryl!” Dax immediately blocked Darryl and raised his right arm, creating a shield.

Dang! Dang!

The blades knocked on the shield, creating loud bangs.

Although Dax was already a Level Two Martial Saint, he was still stunned by Abbess Mother Serendipity’s power. How dark could she be?

“Darryl, hide!” Dax shouted. After he managed to shield Darryl from all the blades, he charged towards Abbess Mother Serendipity with his massive ax in his hand.

Dax had a plan in mind to injure Abbess Mother Serendipity and hold her as a hostage to obtain the Phoenix Pill.

Abbess Mother Serendipity did not expect Dax to have upgraded to Level Two Master Saint. Dax’s ax landed on her waist!

Bang!

Dax did not expect Abbess Mother Serendipity to be unharmed. He was pushed back a few steps.

What just happened? Darryl was puzzled. He quickly gathered his thoughts.

It was the Celestial Silkworm Armor. Abbess Mother Serendipity was wearing the Celestial Silkworm Armor!

Chapter 584

“Megan!” Darryl shouted with bloodshot eyes. “You were the one who stole the Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silkworm Armor!”

The entire time, Darryl thought Evelyn was the one who stole them as she and her friends were the ones feeding him with alcohol the whole night. Never did he ever think that it was Megan!

“That’s right, I took them,” Megan replied. “This is funny. When the Master asked me to take the Supreme Mystery Scripture the other day, I felt so guilty and sorry for you. I felt like such a fool.”

“Megan!”

Darryl clenched his fist tightly. He was furious!

“Stop wasting time, die!” Leroy raised his wrist and held out the Crescent Moon Blade. He charged towards Dax.

Over twenty members simultaneously charged towards them. All of them surrounded Dax and Darryl!

Dang!

Darryl’s Blood Drinking Sword was swaying all

over, but he could not defend himself against so many people. Someone sliced through Darryl's back, and fresh blood oozed out. Darryl held on, not making a sound.

He regretted being there. He thought that it was only Leroy and the Kunlun Sect in the hall. With Dax upgraded to Level Two Martial Saint, he would easily defeat Leroy with Darryl's help. Who knew there were so many people gathered at the hall.

In just less than a minute, Darryl had dozens of cuts. Fresh blood was seeping out all over his body.

Dax fought like crazy and chopped around seven or eight people with his ax. Leroy punched him in the chest, and he fell backward towards Darryl.

"Brother Dax, it is all my fault," Darryl sighed.

"Rubbish, we are in this together!" Dax continued, "If we were to die here today, we shall kill with joy!"

"Great!" Darryl shouted. Both of them charged against the rest again.

Dang! Dang!

Darryl could not remember how long he had fought and how many cuts were on his body. He was entirely covered in blood, feeling the stinging pain all over his limbs, back, chest—all over his body!

Suddenly, a sword pierced through Darryl's

shoulder!

Darryl dropped to the ground and felt his energy drain out.

Leroy hit Dax, and he fell backward. Abbess Mother Serendipity stood right behind him and pierced through his abdomen.

Dax shouted and fell to the floor.

“Dax!” Darryl shouted. He wanted to go to Dax, but before he could stand up, countless people started to charge towards them, wielding shining blades and

swords.

Would they both die there? Darryl was furious.

“Die!” Leroy shouted while charging his blade towards Darryl.

“Dax, I am sorry. It is all my fault.” Darryl clenched his fist. He closed his eyes, feeling completely hopeless.

Chapter 585

Bang!

Right at the most critical moment, a dagger hit Leroy's blade. With a loud crash, Leroy fell backward.

"Who dares to interrupt?" Leroy shouted.

He looked towards the door and saw more than ten shadows rushing towards them. All of them were dressed from top to toe in black, looking fierce. They were Yvette's Twelve Royal Guards!

"It's you!" Everyone was stunned. Earlier, they were poisoned with the Weak Poison and held captive by the Twelve Royal Guards at the Wishing Star Tower. Everyone had thought that they were Indomitable Darby's followers.

The Royal Rat Guard went towards Darryl. "Mister Darby, my princess sent us here to save you. We will rescue you from here," he reassured. "Don't worry, no one can cause you any further harm with us here."

Darryl was stunned. Why would Yvette send someone to rescue him? However, he did not think further. He nodded to the Royal Rat Guard and went

to help Dax.

Darryl held Dax and stepped forward. “Leroy, I’ll only say this once more. Hand over the Phoenix Pill!”

“Phoenix Pill?” Leroy glared at them, “Rubbish! Don’t you dare think of the Phoenix Pill!”

“You have absorbed Yvonne’s spirit energy. Only the Phoenix Pill would be able to save her. I am asking you one last time, are you going to hand over the Phoenix Pill or not?” Darryl growled and clenched his teeth.

What?

Everyone was in shock. They turned to look at Leroy.

There was only one technique of absorbing spirit energy in this world—the Dark Method. However, the method was lost many generations ago. How would Leroy possess the method?

Leroy maintained a dark expression. He could not let anyone know that he cultivated the Dark Method.

“You rubbish, what nonsense!” He spat at Darryl. “Miss Young’s incident had nothing to do with me. The Phoenix Pill is the treasure of the Kunlun Sect. How could I give it to you? Go to hell!”

Leroy lifted his blade again to charge towards

Darryl, bypassing the Royal Rat Guard.

The Royal Rat Guard held Darryl and Dax in each arm and sprinted away from the hall. Once they were outside, he leaped forward and took Darryl and Dax with him. They flew up in the air and left the Hexad School.

“Leroy! You did not give me the Phoenix Pill. I will kill you!” Darryl shouted as loud as he could while he was in the air. His voice was coarse.

All he could think of was Yvonne. Yvonne would die without the Phoenix Pill.

“Rubbish! How dare you ask for the Phoenix Pill?” Leroy stepped out of the hall and pointed in the air towards Darryl.

“Fine, fine, fine!” Darryl’s eyes were all red. Using his internal energy, he roared, “Leroy! In three days, I shall destroy the Kunlun Sect and the entire Kunlun Mountain!”

Darryl’s thundering roar was heard all over Donghai City. Everyone in the hall went silent. A few seconds later, some people burst into laughter.

“Haha! What rubbish is he talking about? He wants to destroy Kunlun Sect? Haha!”

“Yes, he is only a Master Saint! Haha!”

“Master Henderson, did you hear him? The piece of

trash said he wanted to destroy the Kunlun Sect! Haha!”

Everyone was laughing. Leroy could not help but chuckle. “He is crazy. Let’s ignore him. He is just a clown. The most important thing now is to discuss how to destroy the Elysium Gate.”

No one took Darryl’s words seriously, the words from a man who almost died. What a joke.

Chapter 586

Darryl and Dax were brought to a private residence in the north of Donghai City by the Twelve Royal Guards.

The place was huge. With the man-made fountain in its peaceful environment, it was comparable with the Carter Mansion.

At the main hall door, the Royal Rat Guard announced, "Princess, we have rescued them."

The Royal Rat Guard placed Darryl and Dax on the floor. Dax was seriously injured and still unconscious. Darryl rushed over to check his vitals. Knowing that he was safe, Darryl sighed in relief.

A lady in tight jeans and stilettos walked into the hall. She looked amazing. It was Yvette!

Back in the New World, Yvette was a princess who wore silk gowns. In the Earth Universe, she looked even more attractive in modern clothing. All the Twelve Royal Guards were amazed too.

"Good. You may leave with Dax and give him the necessary treatments," Yvette ordered.

"Yes," The Twelve Royal Guards answered. They

left with Dax.

Only Darryl and Yvette were at the hall. They looked at each other silently.

Darryl finally sighed after not knowing how much time had passed. “How did you know that Dax and I were in danger? Why did you rescue us?”

Darryl was cautious since Yvette was the princess of the New World.

Yvette smiled and did not reply directly. “Darryl, be fair. Shouldn’t you be thanking me for saving you? Why are you questioning me?”

Ever since Yvette arrived at the Earth Universe, she had been following the main sects’ whereabouts. Of course, she knew Darryl and Dax were heading to the Hexad School.

“Yes, thank you very much,” Darryl acknowledged.

Darryl’s body was all covered with blood. He was trying hard to hang on with countless wounds all over his body.

“Darry, being bullied by the main sects feels horrible, doesn’t it?” Yvette smiled.

She scanned Darryl as she spoke, “Oh no, it’s such a pity how terrible you look.”

Darryl smiled but did not say a word.

Yvette stepped closer and whispered into Darryl's ears, "I have a way to prevent you from being bullied ever again. If the Elysium Gate were to join the New World, I shall give you the title of Master of Martial Art Community. You will conquer the whole community. What do you think?"

Yvette looked at Darryl anxiously after she finished speaking.

Darryl shrugged. He felt uneasy having Yvette whispering into his ears.

Darryl replied with a smile. "Yvette, you have overestimated me. What luck do I have to be recognized by the New World? Besides, I worship freedom, so I am not used to being controlled by others. I am sorry." He sounded extremely determined.

Yvette was disappointed. "Darryl, did you know plenty of people became rich and famous after joining the New World? Besides, you still owe me a favor from when I rescued Yvonne earlier. You said you would agree to whatever my request is. I am now requesting you to join the New World."

Sigh.

Darryl clenched his fist tightly after he heard that. He was silent for over five minutes before he spoke.

“Sorry, I can’t do it. I can do whatever you ask me to, but I will never betray the World Universe. You have to ask for something else. I shall agree if you want to take my life.”

Chapter 587

”You!”

Yvette was furious. “You do not appreciate the chances given to you. You want to offer your life? Fine, you shall die then.”

She shoved a dagger into Darryl’s hand.

Yvette did not mean to execute him; she was just furious.

Darryl pleaded sourly. “Princess, please allow me to die two days later.”

Yvonne was still waiting for him to rescue her. He could not die before getting the Phoenix Pill.

“You!” Yvette’s face was scarlet red as she stomped her feet. “You owe me a favor, hence I have asked you to join the New World in return, but you have rejected. I gave you an option to die, yet you disagree. You are the Sect Master of the Elysium Gate, and you are also the one not keeping your word.”

Darryl felt conflicted. “I declared that I would destroy the Kunlun Sect in three days,” he explained, “After I obtain the Phoenix Pill and

rescue Yvonne, I am all yours. You can kill me then. I will never go back on my words.”

What?

Yvette was stunned for a few seconds before she burst into laughter.

“Darryl, are you crazy? Although the Elysium Gate’s power improved substantially recently, you only have a few thousand followers. Kunlun Sect has thousands of years and generations of history, with tens of thousands of followers. How would Elysium Gate be able to destroy Kunlun Sect?”

Yvette laughed again. How childish and foolish could Darryl be?

Darryl was not affected by her words. He smiled calmly and assured, “You don’t have to worry about that. The most important thing is that after I destroy the Kunlun Sect and rescue Yvonne, I will agree with whatever demands you have.”

“What a lie!” Yvette exclaimed, but she did not want to discuss it further. “This place here is safe. Both Dax and you can take a good rest here to recover,” she calmly offered, “You can stay here since you are Lilybud’s husband. Also, these spiritual herbs would help you to recover.”

A bunch of herbs appeared in Yvette’s hand. They

looked red and fresh.

Darryl sighed in relief. He smiled and took the spiritual herbs. “Thank you, Princess.”

It was best for them to stay put since Dax was still unconscious.

The private residence was massive and had many rooms. Darryl would be staying in one of the guestrooms. Once he arrived in his room, he quickly took out his cellphone and sent Chester a text.

A simple text that read, ‘Brother Chester, help me to destroy Kunlun.’

Darryl went on to sleep after he sent the text.

The entire residence was in complete silence in the middle of the night. Darryl was in deep sleep when he heard a knock on the door.

Darryl ran towards the door quickly, hoping that it was Dax.

Darryl was surprised to see Yvette at the door instead. She looked alluring under the moonlight.

“Princess, is there anything I can do for you?”

Darryl asked. Why was she there in the middle of the night?

Yvette entered the room with a smile and locked the door behind her. She bit her lip as she asked, “

Darryl, back at the Wishing Star Tower earlier, how did you alter the formation to make me itch all over my body? Can you... can you teach me, please?"

Chapter 588

Yvette bit her lips hard. Previously at the Wishing Star Tower, Darryl modified the formation. It caused her body to itch all over, to the extent that she needed to beg for his forgiveness. That was a powerful technique.

Yvette wanted to learn it from Darryl earlier when she saved Yvonne, but Darryl was not in the right mood, hence she had yet to ask him. Earlier, Yvette recalled the incident and set up the Six Energy Trap again using some logs. However, she still could not figure out Darryl's modification on the trap formation. She had no choice but to ask Darryl.

Darryl smiled. "Princess, I can't teach you about the formation."

Darryl was impressed by Yvette's eagerness to learn. He might have taught her if she was not the Princess of the New World.

Yvette was worried. She squeezed her brows and asked, "Why?"

How could Darryl repeatedly reject all her requests? She would have ordered the Twelve Royal Guards to kill him had he not been Lilybud's husband.

Darryl smiled and looked earnestly at Yvette. “This is because you are the Princess of the New World. If I taught you about the formation, you might use it against people in the Earth Universe someday. I will then be doing wrong to the whole Earth Universe.”

Yvette was furious and speechless.

Why did Darryl still care about the Earth Universe when the community had treated him so terribly? Was he out of his mind?

Yvette sighed, “How are you so selfish? Just teach me. I will promise you that I will never use it against the Earth Universe. Will that be fine? I am just curious to know.”

Yvette looked at Darryl anxiously.

Darryl sighed and smiled. “Fine. I will teach you since you are sincere. However, I have one condition.”

Yvette had forced Darryl to agree to return a favor for saving Yvonne earlier. Now that Yvette requested something else, he must use the opportunity to return the favor to get out of the agreement.

Darryl had an evil smile. Yvette bit her lips and asked, “What are you laughing at? What is your condition for you to teach me? As long as it is

within my capability, I will agree.”

She could see that Darryl was up to something bad, but she was too curious about the Six Energy trap modification.

“Will you agree to anything?” Darryl asked.

At that moment, Darryl saw some black patches on Yvette’s face from the logs in the garden just now. Darryl pointed to his own face and signaled Yvette to wipe her face.

Ah!

When Yvette saw Darryl’s action, her body shivered. Her face turned red as she felt shy and angry.

‘What is he thinking? Is he asking me to kiss his cheek?’ Yvette thought, ‘I am the Princess of the New World; how could he ask me to do that?’

However, Yvette was really desperate to learn about the modification of the formation. She had no idea that she had misunderstood Darryl.

Yvette’s face was scarlet red as she kept her eyes locked on Darryl. He was confused as to what she was up to.

All of a sudden, Yvette walked over to Darryl. She tip-toed and lightly kissed Darryl on the cheek.

Yvette’s face was burning red. She dared not look up

at Darryl.

Sh*t! What was that for?

Darryl's mind went blank. He looked at Yvette but was speechless.

Sh*t, she just kissed him. This Princess of the New World was wild!

Darryl's head was spinning. He looked puzzled. "What are you doing?"

Yvette was furious seeing Darryl's innocent face. She stomped her feet and questioned, "Didn't you just ask me to kiss you?"

How could he pretend that nothing had happened? Yvette stomped hard on Darryl's foot.

Ouch!

Darryl gasped and jumped in shock. "I didn't ask you to kiss me! Go, look at the mirror. There is a black smudge on your face. I pointed at my face to ask you to wipe yours. What were you thinking?"

'You!'

Yvette turned and walked towards the mirror. Her face was burning red! She wanted to dig a hole and hide in it!

Chapter 589

'That was what Darryl meant. What was I thinking? How embarrassing is this?!' Yvette thought.

"Darryl, you..." Yvette stared at the floor and kicked Darryl. "Are you going to teach me or not?"

"Fine, fine. I will teach you." Darryl held back his laughter as he nodded.

If he were to reject her again, Yvette would be furious.

Darryl started to share about the formation while both of them headed to the garden. He taught her all about the formation modification.

Yvette was smart; she managed to pick up the idea immediately. She was so happy that she had forgotten entirely about the embarrassing incident earlier.

After they were done, Darryl went back to the room. His cellphone rang when he was lying on the bed about to fall asleep. It was Zephyr.

Zephyr's trembling voice came through after the call connected. "Sect Master, we're in trouble. I have just received news that all of the sects

gathered around tens of thousands of their followers and are headed towards the Elysium Gate. What shall we do?”

Zephyr sounded panicked. The number of followers was ten or more times greater than the members of Elysium Gate. How could they defend themselves?

Darryl squeezed his brows and explained, “It’s fine. Don’t panic. I will tell you what to do...”

A few minutes later—after listening to Darryl’s plan—Zephyr sounded relieved and impressed. “Sect Master, you are brilliant. Haha! Let the Six Sects suffer this time!”

Darryl smiled and gave some advice before he hung up the call.

In Yunzhou City, tens of thousands of followers led by the Six Sects surrounded the Elysium Gate Main Altar, ready to attack.

All of them believed that they had outnumbered the Elysium Gate, hence they would definitely be able to destroy the sect! However, they did not notice there were many Heaven Energy Trees around the main altar. The trees were moved there overnight from the hill.

In fact, the trees were part of a formation. Darryl had passed the knowledge to Zephyr yesterday on

forming the Ten Directions Godly Formation. The formation was recorded in the Bai Qi Formation, immensely powerful and enchanted.

Nobody noticed anything and stepped right into it. As expected, all of them were lost and trapped in the formation. The members of Elysium Gate then took the opportunity and launched their attack towards those in the formation.

The battle lasted over half a day. All of the sect members suffered injuries. They lost one-fifth of the tens of thousands of followers.

After that experience, they did not pursue to attack further. The Elysium Gate members hid inside the altar. There was the formation outside the altar. There was no way the six sects would be able to attack them.

They could only wait for the Elysium Gate members to leave the altar to destroy them. However, there was no sign of any of the Elysium Gate members heading out, so the group had no choice but to leave after waiting impatiently.

The Elysium Gate became famous after that battle! Everyone heard about how the Six Sects joined forces but were defeated by the Elysium Gate. More and more people came from all over to join the sect.

Meanwhile, in the Carter family, Sara played on the

swing with several young ladies chatting and laughing at the hut nearby. All of them were her friends. She had invited them over as the weather was great.

Sara—while swinging up and down—chimed in excitedly, “Did you hear about what happened yesterday? The Six Sects joined forces to destroy the Elysium Gate, but they were all trapped in the formation set by them in the end. The Elysium Gate trounced the Six Sects easily.”

She cheered admirably, “How powerful is the Elysium Gate?!”

The rest of the ladies nodded in agreement together.

“Yes, that’s right. A few thousand of them had defeated the tens of thousands of followers from the Six Sects. How incredible.”

“I heard about that too. The formation by the Elysium Gate was incredible—even the Six Sects were trapped!”

The news on the Elysium Gate defeating the Six Sects had spread all throughout the community.

An elegant lady strolled towards them, holding a fruit platter. “Girls, what are you all talking about?”

The elegant lady was Darryl’s godmother, Susan Creek.

“Mother!” Sara smiled and walked over to hold Susan’s arm. “Mother, we were talking about the Elysium Gate. Do you happen to know Indomitable Darby, the Elysium Gate’s Sect Master?”

“No, I don’t know such a famous person.” Susan smiled.

Susan heard the news about the attack. The Elysium Gate used the Ten Gold Formation to defeat them. Although she did some research on formations, the Ten Gold Formation was way too advanced.

Sara admired the Indomitable Darby very much. How nice would it be if the Indomitable Darby was her brother? He would be able to teach her all about formations.

Chapter 590

On the other hand, Darryl had fully recovered after resting for an entire night and day at Yvette's residence.

He had received the news in the morning about Elysium Gate defeating the rest of the sects. All of them had left. That was what Darryl had expected—no ordinary person would be able to break the Ten Directions Formation.

After hearing the news, he left a message to Zephyr and instructed him to gather all the followers to head to the Kunlun Mountain.

The original plan was to destroy the Kunlun Sect in three days. It was only the second day when Darryl decided to bring everyone to explore the Kunlun mountain. They would wait for Chester's arrival there, and together they would attack the Kunlun mountain.

Darryl and Dax bid farewell to Yvette in the morning and left the private residence. Dax had almost recovered from his injury. He was so excited about the battle that he spent the entire morning polishing his ax.

In the rural area of Donghai City, the few thousands

of Elysium Gate members had gathered in the afternoon and waited for some time. Finally, Darryl and Dax were spotted walking towards them.

“Greetings, Sect Master!”

All of the members spoke together with their voices as loud as thunder. Zephyr was carrying a ten feet tall Nine Dragons Justice Flag. It looked grand and impressive.

Dax was stunned by what was in front of him. “Darryl, you are Indomitable Darby?”

Darryl had never mentioned the formation of the Elysium Gate to Dax. He was so surprised that he punched Darryl.

“Sh*t! How unexpected! I want to start a new Sect too!”

Among the three of them, Chester was the Eternal Life Palace Sect Master, and Darryl was the Elysium Gate Sect Master. He needed a sect for himself too!

“Dax, you can form a Sect named Flower Mountain,” Darryl laughed, “Just like the Monkey King.”

“Bullsh*t!” Dax laughed, patting Darryl’s shoulder as they embarked on their journey. They led thousands of Elysium Gate members behind them as they headed towards the Kunlun Mountain.

In Donghai City, Lily sat on the couch in the mansion. She had been upset the past few days. Her heart shattered into pieces when she heard the news about Darryl and Yvonne's wedding ceremony, She could not accept the fact that they had a wedding.

Who was she if Yvonne was Darryl's wife?

Earlier, Lily left the concert in anger, and Darryl did not stop her. Since then, Darryl had not returned home and did not even call.

Whenever Lily went into the room and saw Yvonne lying there, she could not help but feel bitter.

"Lily Bud, bring me some water. I am so tired."
Samantha opened the door and walked in.

A fortnight ago, Grandmother Lyndon had organized a tour event. Samantha was asked to help out due to a manpower shortage. The tour event made a lot of money, and Samantha got a big bonus. She was delighted.

Chapter 591

Lily forced a smile and poured some water for Samantha.

“Dear, what’s wrong?” Samantha asked after she noticed Lily’s sour face.

Samantha had been puzzled as to why Lily had been upset for the past few days.

Lily could not hide it anymore. She hugged Samantha and cried, “Mother, what shall I do...”

Samantha was stunned. She patted Lily’s shoulder and asked, “Dear, what happened? Tell me...”

“Mother, Darryl... He married Yvonne...”

Lily did not intend to tell Samantha about it, but she felt too overwhelmed. She poured out everything that had happened.

What?

Samantha’s face changed immediately. She threw her purse on the couch and scolded, “Darryl, that useless man! Eating off my family for three years, living in my family mansion, and my daughter still treated him well. How dare he find another woman outside? And Yvonne, the Young family’s daughter,

how ashamed can she be?”

In Donghai City, everyone wished to build a relationship with Yvonne. The Young family was in the antique business. More often than not, the elite societies would always get antiques as gifts.

Samantha also wished to have a relationship with Yvonne. However, no matter who she was, no one could bully her daughter! To rub salt to the wound, Yvonne was staying in her mansion.

How ridiculous was that?

Samantha was furious when she looked at Lily, “I have told you to divorce that useless man a long time ago to find a better man. You refused to listen. You insisted on being with such a worthless man!”

Samantha angrily stomped upstairs. “I thought Miss Young was a rather decent person earlier. Now I know how cheap she is! She knew the useless one is married. How dare she seduce him and now stay in my mansion?”

Lily quickly stopped Samantha. “Calm down, Mother. Yvonne is still unconscious.”

Lily felt terrible, but she just wanted to share her feelings with her mother, not chase Yvonne away.

Samantha was seething and trembling. “Dear, why do you care for Yvonne? Is there something wrong

with your mind? She is only unconscious, not dead! She should just stay unconscious at her own home. What is she doing in our home?"

Samantha pushed Lily aside and stormed into Darryl's room.

Bang! The room door opened wide. Yvonne laid motionless on the bed.

Samantha shouted, "You shameless woman, get out of here!"

Samantha took out her cellphone and dialed a friend's number. She had planned to send Yvonne home. At the same time, she wanted to ask Kingston how he raised such a daughter!

After ending her call, Samantha saw three silver needles on Yvonne's arm and removed them without a second thought. They would be a hassle when she arranged to move her into the car.

She threw away the silver needles and walked out of the room. "Dear, you don't have to think about it anymore," she reassured Lily. "My friend will come and I will send this woman back to the Young family. On top of that, you must divorce Darryl this time. Otherwise, don't bother calling me your mother."

Samantha was enraged.

‘How dare this useless Darryl bring another woman back to my home? Lily should not be bullied by you!’ Samantha thought.

Chapter 592

”Mom, stop saying that,” Lily whispered.

“Why should I stop? Yvonne is from a well-known family in Donghai City. How can she be so cheap?” Samantha continued, “She has so many admirers, but she had to steal someone else’s husband. How cheap!”

Samantha went to the safe and dug out Lily’s marriage certificates, identification cards, and many other documents. She threw them on the couch and snarled, “You are getting a divorce, do you hear me? I shall announce how cheap that Yvonne is to the entire Donghai City; let them know about how low she is!”

Samantha blew her top. She sat on the couch, crossed her legs, and continued to scold Lily.

Yvonne had gained consciousness while she was in Darryl’s room. She could hear the conversation between Samantha and Lily clearly.

Previously, Yvette put the silver needles in Yvonne’s arm to extend her life. She explained that Yvonne would awaken once they were removed. She would return to her previous condition, and she could only

live for another three hours.

When the silver needles were removed, Yvonne was pale and weak.

Yvonne almost cried when she heard the conversation outside the room. She had never been criticized in such a manner her whole life. However, all those were no longer important. She could only live for another three hours.

Yvonne felt conflicted. All she wanted was to see Darryl for one last time. After some thought, she took out her cellphone and dialed Darryl's number. Tears flowed down her cheeks like a stream.

On the other hand, Darryl and Dax had led Elysium Gate members to the bottom of Kunlun Mountain. Darryl waited patiently there to observe the situation instead of rushing up the mountain. As planned, they would wait for Chester to arrive along with the Eternal Life Palace Sect members. Only then would they attack the Kunlun Sect.

While waiting quietly, Dax joked, "Darry, since when did you win Yvonne's heart? I never knew."

"Honestly, who is more important to you? Lily or Yvonne?"

Dax was puzzled. Both Lily and Yvonne were famous goddesses of Donghai City.

Darry smiled bitterly and shook his head. “This is... Sh*t! Why should I tell you?” Darryl asked, “Since when did you become a busybody?”

Just as he spoke, Darryl’s cellphone rang.

It was all quiet in the woods while everyone was waiting. The cellphone ringtone surprised them. It was awkward.

Darryl reached for his cellphone immediately as he thought it was Chester. That could not be right. The distance between Eternal Life Island and Kunlun Mountain was a few thousand miles. How could Chester have already arrived?

Darryl looked at his cellphone and was shocked to see the name on the screen. It was Yvonne.

Yvonne?

Darryl’s head started spinning, and his body trembled. He answered the call. “Yvonne, you...”

Before he could finish, Yvonne spoke, “Darryl, where are you? I am awake.”

Yvonne forced a smile to make herself sound cheerful.

Darryl panicked as if he was struck by lightning. His eyes were all red as he rambled worriedly, “Yvonne, what happened? What is going on? Tell me, who

removed the silver needles?”

Chapter 593

On the other end, Yvonne's face was covered with tears. She did not cry out loud, worried that Darryl would be in despair.

She dried her tears and pretended to be calm. "Darryl, perhaps this is fate. Both of us are destined not to be together. You don't have to feel sad, I will be sent home. Where are you? I miss you. Can you be here with me for the last few hours?"

"No!"

Darryl collapsed hearing that. He could not control his tears.

"Yvonne, I will not let you die. Never! You are not allowed to die!" Darryl shouted. "Wait for me, Yvonne. You must wait for me."

Slam!

Darryl put down the cellphone with bloodshot eyes.

"Darryl, what's wrong?" Dax furrowed his brows and asked.

Why would Darryl be so emotional out of a sudden?

Darryl clenched his fist tightly and replied in a

hoarse voice. “Yvonne’s silver needles have been removed...”

Darryl cried loudly. “Dax, what do I do? Yvonne only has three hours to live. What shall I do?” His tears were flowing uncontrollably. He had never felt so terrible in over twenty years of his life. He had never been so helpless.

What?

Dax was momentarily stunned and kept his fist clutched tight. Darryl had told him earlier Yvonne was kept alive temporarily with the aid of the silver needles, which should not be removed.

Dax called Chester in a panic. “Brother Chester, where are you?” He asked immediately after the call was connected.

“We shall arrive in another hour,” Chester replied, “Dax, stay with Darryl and wait for me.”

What? Another hour?

“Brother Chester, it’s too late...” Dax replied.

He could see Darryl crying helplessly. “Brother Chester, if Darryl and I die on the Kunlun Mountain, please help to take care of our families!” Dax yelled.

Right after he spoke, Dax stood up and roared, “All the Elysium Gate members! I am your Sect Master

and your best brother. Everyone, follow me to destroy the Kunlun Mountain and get the Phoenix Pill!”

Dax raised his ax and roared. He led the members up the Kunlun Mountain.

“Dax!” Darryl shouted.

There would be tens of thousands of Kunlun members up in the mountain. Elysium Gate members would be outnumbered.

Darryl’s face was red while he glanced at Dax’s back. He was nervous and grateful. Dax was indeed a good brother to him.

Swish!

The Blood Drinking Sword appeared in Darryl’s hand.

“Attack!” Darryl shouted and charged up the Kunlun Mountain.

Chapter 594

The Kunlun Mountain was famous because of the Kunlun Sect.

Kunlun Sect—one of the members of the Six Sects—had been there for a few thousand years. They groomed countless powerful and elite talents.

Kunlun Mountain was also a treasure land. It absorbed the energy from the sky and the ground, producing many unique weapons. The Pure Jade Kunlun Fan, Devil Slaying Blade, and Devil Trap Ring were some of the special weapons created at the Kunlun Mountain.

Kunlun members were all around the world. There were at least tens of thousands of them. All of them traveled to cultivate. Around thirty thousand of them stayed to protect the mountain.

They were guarding the main entrance to the mountain. All of them gathered around to chat. Although their task was to protect the entrance, no one would go up the mountain for trouble.

“Brother...” A young generation member shouted.

The other person chewing on the grass was annoyed after being interrupted. “What is it?”

“Brother, I think people are charging up the hill.”

“Nonsense! Who would dare to come up here?”

They both looked down the hill and were shocked to see a few thousand people running up the hill wielding weapons. Among them, someone was holding a big flag. It was the Nine Dragons Justice Flag.

“Oh no, the Elysium Gate is coming!” The Kunlun member shouted, starting to sweat. He quickly blew the horn as hard as he could. The horn signaled the emergency and all Kunlun members were to gather at once!

“Trouble, trouble!” They shouted. Soon, all thirty thousand of them gathered on guard, holding their weapons. The Elysium Gate members were only less than a hundred meters away.

“Attack!” Dax roared as he led the group and charged towards the crowd, waving his ax around!

Behind Dax, Darryl was holding the Blood Drinking Sword, and they led a few thousand Elysium Gate members!

“Attack!”

Dozens of the Kunlun members at the frontlines dropped dead, soaked in blood. They had no time to

react.

“How dare you come to disturb the Kunlun Sect? You all will die!” One of the elders shouted fearlessly when he saw there were only a few thousand of them. He waved his hand and ordered, “Kunlun members, take order! Kill all of them!”

Charge!

At an instant, tens of thousands of Kunlun members charged forward!

Darryl tore his shirt to wrap the Blood Drinking Sword onto his hand. He was worried that the sword might slip out of his grip! He charged towards the Kunlun members in front of him and killed whoever was in his way.

Roar!

His sword was swaying up and down.

Yvonne did not have much time left. He would die to get the Phoenix Pill!

However, the Elysium Gate was seriously outnumbered. They had lost a fifth of their members.

Darryl was covered in blood. He had lost count on how many people he had killed and how many injuries he had sustained. He could not differentiate

whether the blood he was soaked in was his or not. His mind went blank, and his hand was an unstoppable machine.

“Elysium Gate brothers, listen up!”

Darryl roared, “Zephyr, lead the team to the South East corner!”

“Nimbus, lead the team to the North West corner!”

“Levin, lead the team to the North East corner!”

“Volt, lead the team to the South West corner!”

“Henry Bi-General, lead the team to the Central! Ten Heaven Masters, cover for all!”

Darryl roared with his hoarse voice. In the emergency, that was the formation he planned. Otherwise, all of them would die there.

The formation was called the Dragon Tiger Formation. It was used during the ancient period of the Three Kingdoms by ZhugeLiang.

Chapter 595

Bang!

Elysium Gate members hurried into the formation that Darryl instructed!

“Useless!” An Elder of the Kunlun Sect laughed, leading his members and charged towards the Elysium Gate members.

Once the formation was set, the Elysium Gate members had formed a strong wall to shield themselves from the attack. There was no way the Kunlun Sect could penetrate it. Both sides fought for countless rounds, suffering injury and death.

How impressive that a group of only three thousand people could defend against thirty thousand people.

Roaring and murder engulfed the entire Kunlun Mountain, blood flowing all over. The sound of the knocking of weapons and the shouting of pain were playing in the air. Both sides were killing with heat!

Finally, after battling for over half an hour, a giant figure appeared at the mountain steps. It was Leroy.

He cultivated in the main hall and was at the most

critical stage. However, after hearing the battle sounds for a long time, he risked his cultivation and left towards the main entrance.

He was furious to see countless Kunlun members injured or dead.

“How dare you!” Leroy stared at Darryl. He did not expect that the useless man came to attack.

Leroy saw the Elysium Gate members following Darryl, but he did not know Darryl was the Indomitable Darby. He was stunned and shouted, “Darryl! You have joined the Elysium Gate, hence the arrogance. How dare you come to disturb the Kunlun Sect? You shall die today!”

Leroy charged towards Darryl with his Crescent Moon Blade in hand.

“Leroy, hand over the Phoenix Pill!”

Darryl roared and fearlessly dashed towards Leroy. Darryl had already lost his mind on the level difference between Leroy and himself. His mind was filled with Yvonne. The only thing that mattered to him was that Yvonne would die if he could not get the Phoenix Pill!

Slam!

Darryl and Leroy’s fists met. Darryl bounced and flew back while vomiting blood!

Darryl was already severely injured; the strike almost caused his body to break into pieces.

“Darryl!” Dax’s eyes were burning. He swayed his ax forward to break away from the Kunlun members, hoping to rescue Darryl. However, it was impossible—there were just too many of them. He was surrounded.

“Go away! Go away!” Dax was shouting crazily.

Darryl stood up slowly with blood seeping into his clothes. “Phoenix Pill! Hand over the Phoenix Pill!!” Darryl stared and shouted at Leroy.

Haha!

Leroy laughed as if he had heard the funniest joke. “I can give you the Phoenix Pill. You have to come to get it yourself.”

Darryl clenched his teeth, dragging his body towards Leroy. “Phoenix Pill!”

Darryl charged forward weakly with his Blood Drinking Sword in his grip.

Leroy stopped Darryl’s sword with two fingers and smiled. “You useless one, still thinking about the Phoenix Pill!” He kicked Darryl in the chest, sending him flying as light as a kite about twenty feet away! His ribs cracked as he landed heavily on

the steps.

Darryl felt he had broken into pieces, but he stood up again!

“Hand me the Phoenix Pill!” Darryl said coldly and charged towards Leroy again.

“No, Darryl! No!” Dax shouted when he saw what Darryl did. Tears and blood flowed down his face.

Darryl could not hear him. He walked slowly again towards Leroy!

“The Phoenix Pill, hand it over!” Darryl growled and vomited blood at the same time.

Chapter 596

“Haha! Come on, take two more steps forward, and I shall give you the Phoenix Pill.” Leroy snickered as he teased Darryl.

Darryl was drenched in blood. He left a trail of blood with each step he took.

“Phoenix Pill, Phoenix Pill!” Darryl repeated over and over.

“Sh*t! Why are you still thinking about the Phoenix Pill when you are about to die?” Leroy yelled coldly. He had lost his patience. “You can take the Phoenix Pill in your next life. You will have to die now!”

Leroy raised his Crescent Moon Blade and swung it towards Darryl.

“Darryl!” Dax shouted. He wanted to rescue Darryl, but the Kunlun members surrounded him. Darryl saw the blade; he knew he could not escape. He closed his eyes and gave up on defending himself.

Bang!

Suddenly, there was a loud crash of metals hitting each other. A long sword flew from afar and landed on the Crescent Moon Blade, blocking Leroy’s

attack.

From a distance, tens of thousands of Eternal Life Palace Sect members were charging towards them! Leading the group was a man in a white shirt, holding a feather fan. It was Chester.

“Darryl, Dax!” Chester was furious to see both of them covered in blood. “Attack! Kill everyone!” Chester shouted.

All of the Eternal Life Palace Sect members charged forward, while the Four Guardian Kings charged towards Leroy. The entire Kunlun Mountain was filled with battle cries!

The fight lasted for another half an hour. Under the attack of the Elysium Gate and the Eternal Life Palace Sect, all thirty thousand of the Kunlun members dropped to the ground. Red blood covered the entire main hall. No one was left standing!

Bang!

On the other hand, Leroy could not defend himself any further. He vomited blood as he was surrounded by Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords, the Ten Heaven Masters, and the Eternal Life Palace Sect’s Four Guardian Kings. Along with Dax, there were twenty of them!

Slam!

Dax punched Leroy's chest. He flew across the main hall, hitting the pillars before falling hard on the ground.

"You ambushed me! All of you. How dare you!" Leroy shouted angrily as he vomited more blood, looking pale and weak.

Slap!

Chester slapped him and stared at him coldly. "How dare you claim to be ambushed? Sect Master Darby was attacked by hundreds of you from the Six Sects. Who is the real monster here?"

"You, you..." Leroy could not speak anymore. His whole body was trembling.

"You shall die!" Dax said coldly and raised his ax.

Leroy, the Sect Master of Kunlun Sect, cultivated the Dark Method. He did evil deeds—he deserved to die.

"Father!" At that moment, a young girl rushed forward.

The young girl looked gorgeous, but her face was covered with tears. She was Leroy's daughter, Lydia.

She kneeled on the ground, bowing to the ground, "Brothers, I am begging you. Please release my father, I am begging you..." The young girl bowed

to the ground, her forehead covered with blood.

“Brothers, I beg you. I will hand over the Phoenix Pill.” Lydia’s tears were flowing down her cheeks.

Lydia held out her hands to reveal a bright and shiny crystal-like stone. The stone was round, and it looked alive.

It was the treasure of the Kunlun Sect—the Phoenix Pill!

With his Blood Drinking Sword pointed at Leroy, Darryl laughed, “Haha...”

Despite laughing, his heart was in pain. He glared furiously at Leroy while his tears flowed uncontrollably. Darryl shook his head. “Too late. It’s too late for you to hand over the Phoenix Pill. Too late!” Darryl roared.

After such a long battle, Yvonne had only half an hour to live. It would not help even if he had the Phoenix Pill.

Leroy was sweating all over.

What? Too late?

Leroy was mortified yet curious. “This Phoenix Pill could cure those that are terminally ill. You can take it to cure Miss Young. She will be fine.”

“Haha...”

Darryl snickered coldly and shouted, “Yvonne is at Donghai City. Even if I rush back with the Phoenix Pill to Donghai City without resting, it will be too late. You have to die today!”

Chapter 597

Darryl was devastated. “You killed Yvonne! It was you! I want revenge!” He charged towards Leroy.

“Wait, there is still time. You can still save Miss Young!” Leroy shouted, begging for his life. “There is a Snow Eagle at the back of Kunlun Mountain. The eagle can fly at extreme speeds. It would be able to bring you back to Donghai City in less than an hour.”

The snow eagle was a gift to Leroy from the Emperor of the New World. The Snow Eagle was an extremely rare bird in the New World. Its body size was much bigger than any ordinary eagle. It also had a very fierce character. It was said that the Emperor of the New World spent three years taming the eagle. When Leroy joined the New World, the New World Emperor was delighted. He gave him both the Dark Method and the Snow Eagle.

Leroy kept the snow eagle as his treasure ever since he got it. However, he did not hesitate to offer it to Darryl to save his own life. Why would he need a Snow Eagle when he was about to lose his life?

Leroy kneeled and bowed to Darryl. “Sect Master Darby, forgive me! Please spare my life.” He was no

longer arrogant. What would happen to his daughter if he were to die?

Snow Eagle?

Darryl had a glimmer of hope. Chester immediately ordered his people. "Hurry, go bring the Snow Eagle from the back of the mountain."

A few Eternal Life Palace Sect members rushed towards the back of the mountain. They quickly returned, leading a giant eagle behind them. The giant eagle was covered with flawless white feathers, and it was around two feet tall. Its red eyes made it look extremely alert and smart.

Darryl was overwhelmed when he saw the Snow Eagle. He gripped the Phoenix Pill tight in his hands and dashed towards the Snow Eagle. He reached out to touch its feathers.

Leroy was right. The snow eagle was a magical creature. It kneeled on the floor once Darryl approached it.

Dax was excited. "Haha! Darryl, you can save Miss Young now."

"Darryl." Chester smiled. "Hurry, you need to return to Donghai City immediately to rescue her. Dax and I can manage things over here."

"Great!"

Darryl wiped the blood at his mouth and leaped on the back of the Snow Eagle. He patted the snow eagle gently at its neck, "Let's go!"

The Snow Eagle created a strong gust of wind surrounding them as it spread its wings. It flew up into the sky the very next second. In a blink of an eye, they were a few thousand feet up in the sky!

Darryl's body was covered with blood. His heart wrenched. Although the Snow Eagle traveled at breakneck speed, he was still hoping it could go faster.

At the Young residence in Donghai City, the beautiful courtyard was broken by the ongoing argument in the hall.

Kingston Young stood in the hall, looking upset. Samantha stood right in front of him, with her hands on her waist. "Kingston, what kind of daughter did you raise?" she shouted, "Yvonne knew that he was married. How could she still seduce him? Where is her dignity?"

Samantha continued, "Since your daughter likes the useless one so much, I will give this useless son-in-law to the Young family."

Lily stood beside Samantha and pulled on her arm. "Mother, that's enough," she whispered.

Samantha had sent Yvonne back to the Young residence. She was furious, and she exploded. She pointed at Kingston and started scolding him. Lily did not dare to speak in front of them out of respect.

Kingston was shaking. "I do not want to argue with you," he asserted, "You are not welcome here. Please leave."

Yvonne had gone missing for a few days. He sent everyone searching for her. He was so happy when he saw that Samantha sent her home, but he was surprised and heartbroken to see his daughter looking so pale and weak. Before he could understand what had happened, Samantha started shouting, and Yvonne locked herself in her room.

Chapter 598

“Your daughter is no good,” Samantha spat coldly.

“Samantha, can you stop this already?” Kingston clenched his teeth. All his life, he was a well-respected man. He had never been scolded that badly before.

At that moment, the Young residence's main door swung open. A man covered with blood rushed in. It was Darryl.

“Yvonne, Yvonne, where are you!” Darryl’s eyes were all red!

Although the Snow Eagle had flown extremely fast the entire journey, it had been four hours since the silver needles in Yvonne’s arm were removed.

Lily’s chest tightened when she saw Darryl running in.

Darryl had been missing for the past few days. He did not even tell Lily where he had gone. Although she finally saw him, all he could think about was Yvonne.

Samantha became angrier than before. “Dear, do you see it now? He does not care for you. I don’t

know where he went, but the first thing he did was look for the b*tch!"

Darryl was furious. He clearly knew that none of them would tell him where Yvonne was. He rushed towards her room since she must be there!

As expected, once he opened the door, he saw Yvonne lying there motionless with her eyes shut.

"Yvonne!"

Darryl cried uncontrollably, and his mind spun. He could clearly feel that Yvonne was no longer breathing, and her pulse was really weak. They were all signs of someone dying.

"Yvonne, don't scare me. Please don't scare me!" Darryl shouted. He hugged Yvonne close to his chest. He was devastated.

"Why? Why didn't you wait for me?"

"Yvonne, wake up. It is me, Darryl, your husband. We just got married... You can't just leave me," He choked, tears flowing uncontrollably. He shook Yvonne lightly.

He pushed the Phoenix Pill into Yvonne's mouth as he cried, hoping for a miracle.

A minute passed, then two minutes, and another five minutes.

After ten minutes had passed, Yvonne was still not showing any signs of waking up.

Darryl's heart sank to rock bottom, but he held on to hope. He held Yvonne's hands tightly and rambled endlessly.

"Yvonne, you will be fine. I am begging you; please wake up..."

Darryl was heartbroken. He would regret his entire life if Yvonne died.

Bang!

The door was kicked open. Samantha and Lily walked in.

"Sh*t! How shameful of you? How dare you come here?!" Samantha glared at Darryl. "Coming here immediately for a date with this b*tch. Shame on you, Darryl!"

Samantha then raised her voice and pointed at Darryl, "Let me tell you now. No matter what, you have to arrange for a divorce with Lily. You useless thing. It has been three years now. It is time for you to leave my family!"

Samantha was furious and about to blow her top. Lily had always appreciated him, but he had an affair with another woman. How dare he do that?

She wanted Lily to end the relationship with him immediately.

“Go away!” He released Yvonne’s hands and shouted at them. Darryl could not take the scolding anymore. His eyes were burning red.

Chapter 599

When Yvonne called him earlier, Darryl had already guessed that it was Samantha who removed Yvonne's silver needles!

He could not take it anymore after hearing all the horrible words that came out of Samantha's mouth.

"You're asking me to leave?" Samantha was enraged when she heard Darryl's words.

It was Lily's turn to be furious. "Darryl, how can you speak to Mother in that manner?"

Her heart shattered when she saw Darryl holding Yvonne's hands when she went into the room.

'Now that you have a relationship with her, I am nobody to you, but you're asking my mother to leave now?' Lily thought. She was distraught.

Sigh.

Darryl took a deep breath. He was devastated since Yvonne was still unconscious. He said to Lily, "Samantha is your mother, not mine."

Lily shivered when she heard that. She felt disappointed.

Samantha was still seething when she scolded, "

You ungrateful person! For the past three years, you have been staying and eating at my house. My daughter has always respected you, and this is how you repay her? You are worse than an animal!”

“I’m the useless one? I’m the one worse than an animal?” Darryl clenched his fist tightly. All the anger he kept bottled up for the past three years had exploded at once.

“Just a few months ago, when the Lyndon family ran out of funds and needed to sell your shares to stay afloat, it was me who asked Paul from Dragon Tech to acquire fifty percent of the shares. The shares were then returned to your daughter!” Darryl shouted with red eyes.

“On top of that, I was the one who instructed secretary Pearl to contact Lily about the collaboration between the Lyndon family with Platinum Corporation. I did not call anyone else.

“A month ago, when the Lyndon family chased Lily out of the family, she had to earn money online. The million bucks that she was earned were all from me.”

Darryl completely lost his mind. “I did a lot for the Lyndon family, but how have you treated me? In the past three years, which one of you treated me like a human? In your eyes, I am worse than a dog.”

Darryl's entire body was shaking.

Samantha clenched her teeth, unable to find the words to say. A few seconds later, she laughed. "Why are you talking so much now? Only useless people would talk about what good they had done. What if you were the richest man in Donghai City before? You are still nobody now!"

Samantha realized she was wrong. To be honest, Darryl had done a lot for her family. "Besides, why are you so angry? Lily and I sent Yvonne home. Why are you so dramatic? She is unconscious now, but it wasn't me that made her unconscious."

Darryl looked at her and spat, "Did you know that Yvonne let the Kunlun Sect drain her spirit energy just so that she could save me? The silver needles on her arms were meant to keep her alive. She could only live for three hours once they were removed!"

Darryl's tears keep flowing. "I have the only cure that can save her, but it was too late. Too late."

Lily trembled in guilt. She apologized, "Sorry, sorry. We did not know about the importance of the three silver needles..."

Darryl could not say a word.

Chapter 600

Samantha bit her lip and glared at Darryl. “Who are you trying to fool? Would she really die just by having the three needles removed?”

“Mother, please stop. Darryl is really sad. It was our fault. Please stop talking.” Lily stomped her feet.

“You useless girl!” Samantha scolded. “Where is your pride?”

Samantha realized she was wrong, but she could not help herself.

“Lily, what happened to you? What has he given you? Even if he was rich previously, he is a poor man now. Why must you be with him?”

“It’s fine then. I will just let you be. I am no longer your mother. I will move out tomorrow. I shall go home and pack my stuff. We are ending our relationship.”

Samantha furiously stormed out of the room.

Lily rushed after Samantha, immensely worried. “Mother, listen to me.”

Their voice went further and further away.

Darryl did not stop both of them from leaving. He

sat beside the bed, completely devastated. He felt disappointed looking at Yvonne, whose eyes were still shut.

“Yvonne, please don’t leave. Show me some signs if you can hear me. Move your fingers, blink, anything ... Please, I am begging you...” Darryl called out for her gently. He held Yvonne’s hand tightly, praying for a miracle.

On the other hand, Samantha walked fast outside the Young residence with her stilettos stomping on the street. Her face was full of anger and disappointment.

She mumbled to herself as she stormed off. “The useless one already had another woman. Why do I have such a silly daughter?”

“Mother, wait for me.” Lily walked out of the Young residence and ran after her, looking worried.

Suddenly, a car came speeding towards her when she reached the middle of the road.

Screech!

The driver slammed the brakes, but it was too late. Lily was stunned, the car was speeding so fast, and she had nowhere to hide.

Bang!

The car hit Lily hard. She flew up as light as a flower

petal before landing on the road. The street was painted with her blood.

“Lilybud!” Samantha screamed at the top of her lungs. She ran and held Lily as she started crying. “Lilybud, my daughter...”

She cried, and her heart shattered. Lily did not respond.

“Daughter, please don’t scare me. You will be fine; you will be fine...” Samantha’s tears were flowing. She pulled out her cellphone and dialed the emergency number. “Hello, send an ambulance! Please save my daughter...”

After she ended the call, Samantha hugged Lily tightly and cried. She felt as if her heart was sliced into pieces. 2

Chapter 601

On the other hand, at the Lyndon family. ①

Darryl held Yvonne's hand in a tight grip; he was devastated.

It had been half an hour, but Yvonne's eyes were still shut tight; she showed no signs of regaining consciousness. Darryl felt utterly overwhelmed.

"Yvonne, I beg you; please wake up. I am begging you." Darryl sobbed; his tears dripped onto his shirt. His shirt was bloodied after the battle at Kunlun Mountain. His tears seeped into the bloodstains.

Darryl cried uncontrollably. His sincerity might have even moved the heavens.

Suddenly, Yvonne's fingers moved slightly.

It shocked Darryl, and he almost jumped. He looked at Yvonne and wondered if it was only his imagination. Then, Yvonne sighed softly as she slowly opened her eyes.

"Yvonne!" Darryl shouted. Then he hugged her tightly. "Yvonne! Thank goodness, you are fine! You are alright..."

An hour had passed since Yvonne took the Phoenix Pill, but Darryl felt as if it had been a century.

When he realized that Yvonne's body was warmer, Darryl felt emotional. He thought it was God's greatest gift that Yvonne had regained her consciousness.

Yvonne was still weak and pale; she leaned against Darryl's chest and smiled. "Darryl, I am not dreaming, right? I am not dead?"

"That's right; you didn't die. You didn't die..."
Darryl's entire body shook.

"You—what happened to you? Why are you covered in blood?" Yvonne asked weakly as she looked at Darryl.

Before Darryl could speak, his cellphone rang. He was stunned when he looked at the screen.

The caller was Lily. Darryl sighed; he hesitated before he answered the call.

Once the call connected, he heard Samantha's voice. "Darryl! You're a heartless man! I will never forgive you if anything were to happen to Lily!"

It was Samantha. She cried loudly; she did not even wait for Darryl's response. "My poor daughter not only met a heartless bastard, she even got into a car

accident. I don't even know if she is still alive. Give me back my daughter! Give me back my daughter!"

What?

Darryl was shocked when he heard Samantha's words. He stood up shakily.

Had Lily been in a car accident?

Darryl felt worried and guilty.

"Yvonne, I have to rush to the hospital." Darryl panicked; he wanted to leave.

Yvonne quickly jumped out of bed and said, "I'll come with you."

Darryl nodded; he held Yvonne's hand in a tight grip, and they left hurriedly.

...

At a hospital in Donghai City.

Dozens of people had gathered in front of the emergency room, and all of them were from the Lyndon family.

Chapter 602

William, Elsa, and a few other younger members from the Lyndon family were there. Even their grandmother was there.

After Samantha informed her family about Lily's accident, Grandmother Lyndon was worried sick about her granddaughter.

Even though Lily was not her favorite, she was still her biological granddaughter. Not long ago, Lily had given all the money she earned from her live show to help the Lyndon family. Grandmother Lyndon was grateful for what she had done.

Samantha sat on the chair in the corridor as she cried uncontrollably.

A young man with spiky hair stood outside the operating room. He smoked a cigarette; he had ignored the "No Smoking" sign beside him.

That young man was the culprit; the driver who ran over Lily.

The entire family stared at him in anger.

"How did you drive?" Grandmother Lyndon asked him as she held onto her walking stick.

The spiky-haired young man drove a luxury car—a Maserati. He must be part of a wealthy family since he had a car like that at such a young age. He did not look familiar to any of them; he was probably not from Donghai City.

Lily was severely injured, and they had yet to get an update about her condition. It would definitely cost the young man a hefty sum.

The young man ignored Grandmother Lyndon; he continued to smoke his cigarette.

"You ran over someone. Don't you feel guilty about that? How arrogant!"

"That's right! You ran the red light! What kind of attitude is this? Show some respect; we are from the Lyndon family."

The Lyndon family's younger members could not stand the young man's bad attitude. He was the cause of the accident, and yet he still acted arrogantly!

The security camera showed that Lily had run out of the Young residence. She crossed the road at the pedestrian crossing when the light was green.

The young man had run the red light and hit Lily.

"This is how I usually drive. What do you think you

can do to change that?" the young replied calmly. He took a deep breath and blew the smoke toward Grandmother Lyndon.

"You and your family should stop shouting. I might have hit someone, but at least, I did not run away. What can you do about it? You don't have to act arrogant in front of me. The Lyndon family is nothing to me; my sister is Angela Angel," he spoke proudly.

Angela Angel was a famous artist, and that young man was Don Angel, her younger brother.

Angela, the top female artist, was at Donghai City for her concert.

She was quite reputable in the entertainment industry; her only flaw was her notorious brother, Don.

Don was an arrogant man. He relied on his sister's reputation in the entertainment industry to stay arrogant and proud. He was in Donghai City for his sister's concert. He had decided to stay in the city for a few days after the show had ended.

He had planned to leave that day; he did not expect to be involved in an accident instead.

He was not worried because he was not drunk, nor did he flee the scene. He had only been texting on

his phone and disregarded the traffic light. He probably only needed to compensate the Lyndon family with some money from his insurance.

One of the Lyndon family said softly, "I remember now. He was in the magazine; he's Angela's brother."
"

What? That was Angela's brother?

Everyone was in shock. Angela had been famous in the entertainment industry for more than ten years. Many people would treat her to meals whenever she held her concerts. Angela was also close to many dark societies. The Lyndon family would not want to cause any conflict with her. That was why Don had behaved so arrogantly. He was the brother of a famous artist; he was rich and powerful.

Grandmother Lyndon felt embarrassed.

When he saw the Lyndon's family's hesitation, Don turned toward Samantha and said, "The lady I hit was your daughter? I would like to know; why she didn't use her eyes when she was crossing the road? Sh*t! Is she trying to kill herself by running into the middle of the road?"

Chapter 603

"She was running across the road; she deserved it!" Don added arrogantly.

Samantha was furious when she heard those words, but she dared not fight back.

He was Angela's brother. Just one phone call from his sister was enough to get the people from Donghai City's dark society to seek revenge for her.

The rest of the Lyndon family members also felt that Don was too arrogant, but none of them dared to say a single word.

Finally, Elsa could not stand it anymore. "Lily was using the pedestrian crossing when the light was green. And you? You ran the red light. Do you still think that you are in the right?"

Everyone in Donghai City knew about the two beautiful ladies in the Lyndon family—Lily and Elsa. Elsa was bold and kind; she was not afraid of Don.

Just as Elsa spoke, a woman pulled her arms, and she shook her head as she said softly, "Elsa, stop speaking."

Don's sister Angela was someone famous. The

Lyndon family would not want to find any trouble with her. Elsa was not satisfied, but she did not speak further.

Don stared at Elsa and smiled. "You are such a beauty. Yes, I can still act arrogantly even though I hit someone. So?"

His sister had connections with many important people in Donghai City. It was only a simple car accident; she would be able to settle it quickly; he did not need to worry about the Lyndon family.

The entire Lyndon family was speechless.

Suddenly, a loud roar was heard from the lift entrance. "Your sister is Angela, and that gives you the right to act so arrogantly after hitting someone with your car?"

It was Darryl; eyes were burning red!

Yvonne was followed behind him closely; she could not stop him.

"If anything were to happen to my wife, you will repay it with your life!" Darryl almost went crazy. He charged forward and hit Don.

Slam!

It was only one punch, and Don flew more than ten meters backward; he landed on the floor after he hit

the reception desk. He immediately vomited a mouthful of blood.

The nurses at the counter screamed and went to hide. Many people had started to gather around the corridor.

"How dare you hit me! You will die for this!" Don shouted as he stared at Darryl with great anger.

Darryl stepped forward and grabbed his collar and continued to punch him.

The entire hospital was silent, and so they could hear the sound of each punch. Everyone was nervous.

Then, Darryl stopped. Don's face was swollen, and a few of his front teeth were gone too.

Darryl was furious. He was so worried during his journey to the hospital. When he heard Don's arrogant words, he could not control his temper anymore.

"You better pray that nothing bad will happen to my wife. Otherwise, I will end you!" Darryl shouted. He looked terrifying.

Chapter 604

The atmosphere was tense.

Darryl's eyes looked scary. Don trembled when he looked at him, but he was not afraid when he thought of his sister. He pointed at Darryl and said, "Just you wait! Wait here, and you shall see!"

Then, Don turned and rushed into the lift. Once he reached the ground floor, he pulled out his cell phone and dialed Angela's number. The call was answered almost immediately.

Don cried pitifully. "Sister, I am being bullied at Donghai City, you must help me."

Due to his relationship with Angela, people would fear him wherever he went. No one had dared to hit him before that day.

Angela had only completed her role as a mentor for a singing program. She was in the dressing room while she got her brother's call. "Don, did you get yourself into trouble again?"

Don replied, "Sister, it is not my fault. I hit a woman in a car accident, and she's from Donghai City's Lyndon family. The family started to hit me without understanding the truth about the matter.

One of them was so arrogant that he said he would kill me—"

Angela sighed and asked, "Are you telling the truth?"

Don added quickly. "Sister, why would I lie? Let's have a video call so that you can see my wounds."

"Fine, fine. Stop whining." Angela consoled him, "Let me call a friend. She is quite a well-known person in Donghai City. I'll get her to come to you. I shall come over later." She hung up after that.

...

In the corridor to the emergency room.

Once Don had left, the Lyndon family gathered their thoughts and started to scold Darryl.

"Are you crazy? Why did you hit him?"

"Do you know who he is?"

"You're useless! Not only are you not helping, but you are also causing more problems for our family."

Even though everyone knew that Don was wrong, no one would agree to what Darryl had done. All of them were annoyed with him.

Samantha stood up and pointed at Darryl. "You bastard! How dare you show up here? Get lost!"

Leave!"

Samantha was furious; she turned toward her family and said, "This useless person is having an affair behind Lily's back. Shameless!"

As she spoke, she pointed at Yvonne and scolded, "This is the b*tch!"

Wow!

The Lyndon family was surprised to hear that; they stared at Yvonne with contempt. They never expected the Young family's eldest daughter would have an affair with Darryl.

Yvonne was known as the Goddess of Donghai City. No one expected she would choose to be with someone like Darryl. During Yvonne and Jeremy's wedding, they had already noticed that something was not right between them. They did not expect that it was because of an affair! What a disgrace!

"How disgusting, Miss Young!" William laughed and said sarcastically, "The infamous Goddess of Donghai City had such a unique taste."

Everyone laughed at William's words.

"I—"

Yvonne bit her lips; her face was scarlet red.

Chapter 605

Yvonne bit her lips. All she wanted to know was Lily's condition; she did not expect they would scold her in such a manner.

Her family had pampered her all her life, and everyone respected her. When she heard those humiliating words from the Lyndon family, she felt so helpless and she wanted to hide.

Darryl held onto his anger and said softly to Yvonne, "Wait for me in the car."

The most important thing was Lily's condition. There was no point for him to argue with the Lyndon family.

Yvonne nodded and left with a heavy heart.

When Yvonne left, Grandmother Lyndon was furious. She pointed at Darryl and said, "Bastard! How did our family end up with such a rubbish son-in-law."

"You are not welcome here! Get lost!"

"Didn't you hear us? Get lost!"

The entire family pointed at Darryl as they scolded him.

Darryl clenched his teeth, and his fists tightly. He was furious and almost exploded, but he tried hard to control himself.

He only wanted to know about Lily's condition. Was she okay?

Ding!

The door to the emergency room slid open. The hospital's Chief of Staff, Shelly Sullivan, walked out of the room; she looked tired. She removed her white robe, and that was the perfect body that all men would love.

“Chief Sullivan, how is my daughter?” Samantha immediately asked.

Shelly sighed and replied, “Don't worry. Lily was very lucky. A normal person would not have probably made it after such an accident.” She continued with a smile. “She is fine now. There were some bone fractures and she sustained some head injuries. I thought she would be in a coma for some time, but she woke up. I will go and take a look at her CT scan. You all may go in to see her.”

Stella excused herself and walked back to her office.

When she learned that Lily was okay, Samantha sighed in relief as she walked toward the ward. The Lyndon family went with her as well, and Darryl

trailed behind them.

In the ward, Lily laid on the bed; her face was pale, but her eyes were alert.

Finally, Darryl felt relief. Lily was fine, and that was great.

Darryl was so worried on his way to the hospital.

Samantha smiled and sat beside the bed as she held Lily's hand. She was glad but her heart ached so much.

"My dear, you scared me." Samantha's eyes were red.

"That's right." Grandmother Lyndon walked closer to the bed as well. She said, "Lilybud, you must rest well. I was so worried when I heard that you were in a car accident."

Lily smiled and looked around the room. "Grandmother, Mother, I am fine. Don't worry about me."

Lily's head spun, and her body ached. She was unsure if she could make it.

Darryl squeezed through the crowd and walked toward the bed; his eyes were red as he looked at Lily.

Lily saw him too. Both of them stared at each other

but none of them said a word.

A while later, Darryl apologized to her. “My dear wife, I am sorry. I—”

He could not continue; he felt extremely guilty. If he had spoken calmly with Lily at the Young residence, Lily and Samantha would not have left in anger, and Lily would not have met with a car accident.

Darryl felt extremely guilty.

He had never expected Lily looked at him blankly and said, “Who are you?”

Suddenly everyone in the room looked at Darryl as well. They were glad that Lily did not want to acknowledge him.

Darryl was shocked. “Lilybud, I know that you are still angry at me. Please don’t do this to me.”

Lily looked at Samantha. “Mother, who is he? Why does he say that he is my husband?”

Samantha laughed and pointed at Darryl. “You heartless man! Didn't you hear what she said? Lily does not want to know you; what are you still doing here?”

“Get lost!”

“Leave now!”

William and the rest started to scold him.

Chapter 606

Darryl's heart was in pain. He sighed as he looked at Lily and left the ward.

'Lily must be mad at me that she did not even want to acknowledge me anymore,' Darryl thought. 'I shall visit her again when she is less emotional.'

In the ward, Lily watched Darryl leave. She furrowed her brows and asked, "Mother, who was that person?"

Lily's face was full of curiosity.

What? Did Lily not recognize Darryl? The Lyndon family was in shock.

What was going on?

"Lily, he is our live-in son-in-law. Don't you remember him?" William laughed.

Lily was even more confused. "Live-in son-in-law? William, what are you talking about?"

Everyone looked at each other.

It was obvious that Lily was not pretending; she really did not recognize Darryl!

She could recognize everyone. Why could she not

remember Darryl?

Darryl was stunned to hear what Lily had just said in the ward! He turned to look at Lily and felt a sharp pain in his heart. She had forgotten about him.

Darryl's mind went blank. Then, like a crazy person, he rushed toward the Chief's office.

In the office, Shelly held a few CT scans in her hand as she analyzed them carefully.

She stood up when she saw Darryl. "Darryl, you are here."

"What happened to my wife? Why wouldn't she remember me? She can remember everyone except me. What is going on?" Darryl rushed forward and pressed his hands onto Shelly's shoulders as he shouted desperately.

When she felt the pressure of Darryl's hands on her shoulders, Shelly blushed and said, "Darryl, I was just looking at Lily's CT scan. Her brain injury was pretty serious. I believe she is suffering from Selective Memory Loss."

Selective Memory Loss?

Darryl's heart sank; he was stunned.

Shelly nodded. "Yes, selective memory loss, which

is the loss of memory over a certain period. She could not recognize you, but she knew about everyone else. It appeared that she had lost her memories from the past three years," Shelly said softly.

She had heard about Darryl and Lily's wedding, and hence she knew that both of them were married about three years ago.

Darryl felt a sharp pain in his heart. "You mean she could not remember everything that had happened for the past three years?"

"That's right." Shelly nodded. "As for the reason why she lost her memory, perhaps it was stress from various bad incidents, and she wanted to forget all of them."

Shelly bit her lips and continued to say, "Her memory loss may be temporary, or it may be permanent."

Darryl fell onto the chair when he heard that.

...

On the other hand, in the ward, the Lyndon family knew that Lily had suffered memory loss!

Samantha would be heartbroken under normal circumstances to know that her daughter had lost her memory for the past three years, but she felt

delighted.

Her memory loss was a blessing in disguise. She had forgotten about Darryl, and that was the best thing that could happen to her.

"Mother, the man earlier; he kept saying that he's my husband. Is there something wrong with him?" Lily asked curiously as she laid on the bed.

It was disgusting that a man would come out of nowhere and claimed that she was his wife.

"Yes, something is wrong with his brain."

Samantha nodded. "That was Darryl. He is the most useless and heartless person. He is also the disgrace of the Darby family. The Darby family was the top family in Jiangnan. He is their second son, but he had violated his brothers and sisters and caused his grandfather to die of anger—"

Lily was angry after she heard what Samantha had said. How could there be people like him in the world?

"Oh, yes, my daughter. I've also introduced a new boyfriend to you recently," Samantha said with a smile. ①

Her daughter had lost her memory; it was the best time to introduce a new boyfriend to her. There were men from many rich and famous families who

admired Lily. It was the best time to find her a good match. All those men were from families much richer than Darryl.

Lily smiled. "Mother, you are rushing me to get married."

"Of course, you need to catch up. Most girls your age are already married." Samantha smiled. "His name is Wade Clement, and he is handsome and wealthy. Why don't you let me decide on your marriage?"

"Yes." Lily nodded. "I shall do as you wish, Mother."

"Great!" Samantha was delighted. Wade was her friend's son, and he looked smart. Most importantly, his family was wealthy; they were in the timber business, and they had assets worth billions!

"Let me give Wade a call. Try to spend some time with him. He can take care of you here." Samantha smiled.

Lily did not want to spoil her mother's excitement, so she nodded. "Fine."

Lily's memory was rewound back to three years ago, so she could only remember Samantha's rush for her to get married. 'I am at the suitable age for

marriage. Since Mother wished for me to get married soon, then I shall try to spend some time with Wade,' Lily thought.

Chapter 607

Samantha smiled. It was great that her daughter had lost her memories for the past three years!

"Wade is a smart man; he is the perfect match for you!" Samantha held Lily's hand and continued to say, "Wade is about 1.8 meters in height, his family is in the timber business, and they have assets worth billions."

Samantha took out her cell phone as she spoke and sent a text to Wade; she asked him to go to the hospital.

Suddenly, a loud roar came from outside of the ward!

"Where is the Lyndon family? Come out here now!"

That voice was so loud. The Lyndon family walked out of the ward and looked at where the voice came from. They were in shock.

A man walked toward them from the stairs!

It was Don.

Don was beaten up badly by Darryl; his face was still swollen, but he was back for revenge.

There was a beautiful lady beside him. She had a

perfect body figure, dressed in a tight top and black jeans; she looked incredibly sexy. It was Abby Guy.

There were about twenty black-attired men behind her. All of them were huge, with tattoos on their arms; they looked fierce and unfriendly.

After Darryl beat up Don, he called his sister, Angela. Then, she called for Abby when she heard that someone had bullied her brother.

Angela and Abby were old friends. Angela met the Guy siblings, Brandon and Abby, a few years ago when she was at Donghai City for a business show.

Grandmother Lyndon trembled when she saw the men. She could barely hold on to her walking stick!

Did Don go to Abby for help?

Donghai City's underground power was split into two zones.

Brandon and Abby, the two Guy siblings, held power in the western city. Dax had power in the eastern side of the city.

When Emei Sect's Abbess Mother Serendipity attacked the Sanders Mansion, Dax had lost many of his members. His influence in Donghai City was no longer as strong as it had been before that.

Brandon and Abby had taken the opportunity to

invade and take over many of Dax's businesses.

In half a month, almost the entire underworld powers were taken by Brandon and Abby. With their strength, they could do almost anything that they wanted.

The Lyndon family panicked when they saw Don with Abby.

Don pointed at the Lyndon family angrily and shouted, "It's them. You must teach them a lesson."

Don's face was still in pain, and he was furious.

Abby nodded as she stared at Grandmother Lyndon. "Old Lady, how dare you and your family act as if Donghai City belongs to you? Don may have accidentally hit a member from your family, but he did not refuse to compensate you. How dare you hit him? Who gave you the power to do so?"

Abby's voice was not loud, but it was with intense pressure.

The Lyndon family looked at each other; they were worried.

Grandmother Lyndon coughed and said, "Miss Guy, that was a misunderstanding."

Due to the influence of the Guy siblings in Donghai City, she dared not comment any further.

Abby smiled. "A misunderstanding?"

Abby had been Angela's friends for a couple of years. That was the first time Angela had asked for her help. She had to teach the Lyndon family a lesson.

Men started to surround them; the Lyndon family was in trouble.

They had beaten up Angela's brother, and he had brought Abby with him. The Lyndon family was in deep trouble.

Don held his fists tightly and shouted, "Don't waste time with them. Tell them to surrender the man who had hit me!"

They would get rid of him that day!

Chapter 608

Abby nodded and looked at the Lyndon family coldly. "Who was the one who hit him? Show yourself at once."

"I was the one who beat him up."

A cold voice was heard before they saw Darryl emerged from the corridor.

Shelly was beside him. Both of them had discussed Lily's condition in the Chief's office when they heard the commotion outside.

Abby saw Darryl, and she was stunned. Then she was excited.

Abby had always wanted to meet Darryl again ever since he gave her the Godly pill. She wanted to be his student, but Darryl had refused to accept her.

Abbess Mother Serendipity had badly injured Darryl; she thought she would never see him anymore. Since she saw him again, she would definitely want to try her best to make him take her as a student!

Grandmother Lyndon quickly walked forward with her walking stick and said, "Miss Guy, it was him;

Darryl did it. It had nothing to do with my family."

William and the rest nodded in agreement.

"Yes, it was not us. It was Darryl who beat up Don."

"We will not stop you, no matter what you want to do with this live-in son-in-law."

The Lyndon family immediately denied their relationship with Darryl.

That useless Darryl was in trouble again. Why would the Lyndon family want to be involved, especially when Lily did not even remember him?

Shelly was worried; she pulled Darryl's shirt and said softly, "Darryl, you should leave."

There were more than twenty of them; how could Darryl defeat them?

Shelly was speechless. The Lyndon family were too heartless to deny their relationship with Darryl immediately.

William glared at Shelly and said, "Chief Sullivan, you should stay out of this."

Darryl deserved it as he was the one who beat up Don; he deserved to die! If Darryl were to leave, Don would blame the Lyndon family.

"He is the one!" Don pointed at Darryl furiously

and said, "Sister Abby, I want him to be stuck in a wheelchair for the rest of his life!"

Don shouted; his eyes were red!

"He was the one who beat you up?" Abby finally gathered her thoughts.

Don nodded. "That's right; it's him. It's him!"

"I can't help you with this," Abby replied coldly. Then she walked excitedly toward Darryl and gripped his arm. She smiled and greeted, "Master!"

What?

Everyone was stunned; they could not believe it.

What had happened? Why did Abby address Darryl as Master?

The whole floor was in complete silence.

Shelly was stunned too. She looked at Darryl and wondered about his complicated background.

Darryl looked at Abby and replied, "What did I tell you earlier? You cannot address me as Master before I agree to take you as my student. I have not agreed to it yet."

Abby wanted to learn to produce elixir desperately. She bit her lips as she swung Darryl's arms. "Master, please take me as your student. Please..."

Wow!

The men who came with Abby were surprised as well; they could not understand it. Abby had always been a tough and fierce character; everyone respected her in Donghai City. They had never seen her in such a gentle manner. She even sounded lovely.

None of them dared to continue to watch the scene unfolded.

Chapter 609

”Master, please accept me as your student. Please ...” Abby said softly.

Darryl could not stand her anymore. He sighed and said, “We shall talk about it later. Now, Don hit my wife with his car and claimed that she deserved it. How shall we deal with this?”

Abby trembled when she heard that. She walked toward Don.

Slap!

She raised her hand and slapped Don’s face unexpectedly.

The clear sound shocked everyone there.

Don touched his face; he was furious and surprised. “Sister Abby, what are you doing?”

Abby scolded him, “Shut up! Apologize right now!”

“Sister Abby, I—” Don cried.

‘Abby had promised me that she would teach them a lesson. Why did she slap me? Who is this Darryl?’ Don thought.

Don had so many questions in his mind, but he

dared not ask them.

“Sorry, I am sorry. It is all my fault. I will compensate you.” Don nodded and bowed as he spoke; he was no longer arrogant.

Darryl did not speak. He glared at Don, then turned and walked down the stairs.

“Master, wait for me!” Abby stomped her feet and chased after the man.

“Master, please accept me as your student. Please.” Abby would not stop.

Once they reached the lobby on the ground floor, Darryl stopped and said, “Fine, I will accept you as my student.”

Darryl only wanted her to leave, so he decided to agree to her request for the time being.

“Really?!” Abby was so excited that she gave Darryl a hug and a kiss on his cheeks.

“What?”

Before Darryl could gather his thoughts, Abby immediately knelt in front of him.

“Master, please accept this bow from me as your student.” Abby bowed to Darryl and then stood up happily.

“Master, when will you start to teach me to produce

elixirs?” Abby asked excitedly.

“We'll see about that tomorrow. I need some peace and quiet; stop following me. I am getting annoyed.” Darryl quickly walked out of the hospital.

“Yes, Master.” Abby smiled. “Master, I shall wait for your call tomorrow. Don't forget. You must teach me the way to produce elixir.”

Darryl waved his hand without looking back.

Once he stepped out of the hospital, Yvonne walked toward him in her stilettos.

“How is Lily?” Yvonne asked worriedly.

Darryl sighed and said bitterly, “She is safe for now, but she is suffering memory loss. She cannot remember anything that happened for the past three years. She could not even recognize me.”

What?

Lily had memory loss?

Yvonne was shocked; she asked worriedly, “How did that happen?”

Chapter 610

"Chief Sullivan said that she had a brain concussion, and that leads to the selective memory loss," Darryl said as he smiled bitterly.

Yvonne felt terrible when she heard that.

She bit her lips and was silent. After a while, she was determined when she said, "Darryl, I don't mind sharing you with Lily. You should get her back."
"

Darryl was shocked to hear that; he did not expect Yvonne to say that. He did not know what to say, so he hugged her tightly. "Yvonne—"

Yvonne sighed and added, "Darryl, you have to get her back. She cares for you."

Darryl hugged her tightly and sighed. "She doesn't remember me anymore. Perhaps this is fated to happen; maybe I am not destined to be with her."

"You—" Yvonne trembled as she looked at Darryl. "You've decided to give up on Lily?"

"Yes." Darryl nodded. "Honestly, I know that Lily cared for me too, but the Lyndon family does not like me. Even if I win her back, they will still create

problems for us. So, I have decided to give up."

Yvonne bit her lips when she heard that.

"It's fine." Darryl patted her head. "Let's go. Let's take a walk by the beach and go for a movie."

"Sure!" Yvonne nodded and decided not to think about it further. She held onto Darryl's arms, and they walked happily toward the beach.

...

At the Darby residence.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stood up happily; she looked surprised.

"Are you serious? Is it true?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked as she looked at Jean.

"Yes, Master, it is true. The Kunlun Sect has been destroyed," Jean replied. She could not believe it either!

The news about Kunlun Sect had spread to all corners of the city.

Kunlun Sect, one of the Six Sects, had been destroyed. Who would believe it?

The entire Kunlun mountain was vacant. There was no one left.

The tens of thousands Kunlun members who

guarded the mountain with the Sect Master, Leroy Henderson, had disappeared. However, there were no bodies either. The only thing left was blood on the mountain grounds.

Chester had told his followers to seal all the roads that led to the mountain during the attack. He had managed to capture all of the Kunlun members when they tried to escape from the mountain.

That was also the reason why no one knew how the Kunlun Sect was destroyed.

No one knew who was behind it; all the sects were worried.

"Master, do you think it was Darryl?" Jean asked softly.

A few of the Emei members trembled when they heard that.

About three days ago, at the Hexad School main hall, Darryl did warn that he would destroy the Kunlun Sect in three days. Half of Donghai City heard that.

It was the third day then. Was it him?

"Shut up. Don't spread rumors," Abbess Mother Serendipity said. "How could he do that? Do you know that there are tens of thousands of members at the mountain? Kunlun Sect Master Leroy is a

Level Four Martial Saint. Who is Darryl? How could he have destroyed the entire Kunlun Sect? Sect master Leroy could kill him with just a flick of his finger."

"Who do you think did that then, Master?" Megan asked.

Chapter 611

Abbess Mother Serendipity sighed as she sat on the chair.

Even though she wore a long purple dress, her perfect figure was still visible.

"I don't know who destroyed Kunlun Sect," Abbess Mother Serendipity said calmly. She took a sip of tea and continued to say, "No matter who it was, it would not be that bastard, Darryl."

...

The Young residence in Donghai City.

Darryl laid on the wooden chair as he enjoyed his tea. Yvonne sat quietly beside him; she was smiling.

Darryl had been staying at the Young family's guestroom for the past two days.

Kingston had no choice. He wanted to chase Darryl away. However, Yvonne had decided that she would only marry Darryl. He had no choice but to accept her decision.

After she had rested for two days, Yvonne was finally recovered. Her face was rosy, and she was as beautiful as before that.

The snow eagle rested near the flower bushes as they enjoyed the sun.

Yvonne laughed. "What an intelligent snow eagle! It is sunbathing. How cute!"

Darryl smiled; the most unexpected reward he got after he destroyed the Kunlun Sect was the snow eagle.

The snow eagle could communicate with humans. It enjoyed its time with Yvonne and Darryl. It would fly around when no one was around.

No matter how far it went, it would always return when Darryl whistled for it.

"Did you hear that? Yvonne said that you are cute," Darryl said to the snow eagle.

The snow eagle got excited and went close to Yvonne; it pushed her lightly.

"Good eagle." Yvonne patted and hugged it. Then she said to Darryl, "Hurry, take a picture for me."

"Sure, sure." Darryl took out his cell phone. Suddenly his phone rang.

It was Dax. He immediately took the call.

Dax's voice came from the other side of the line. "Darryl, is Yvonne okay now?"

Darryl laughed. "She is fine."

"That's great." Dax sounded excited. Then he said earnestly, "Darryl, you have to come to Kunlun Mountain now. Just a few seconds ago, Chester and I found Leroy's underground treasure vault. Come quickly!"

Ever since they destroyed the Kunlun Sect, none of the Kunlun members dared to return to the mountain. Who would dare to go back when their Sect Master had vanished too?

Dax and Chester checked the entire mountain and found an underground treasure vault. Dax immediately called Darryl. Of course, he wanted to share the great news with his brother.

An underground treasure vault?

Darryl was excited. "What is inside the vault?"

"A lot of gold and jewels, and one great thing!" Dax replied excitedly.

"A great thing?" Darryl wondered about it. "What is it? Tell me!"

"I am not telling you." Dax laughed before he continued to say, "Just get here. Chester and I will wait for you here."

Darryl could not wait any more; he bid farewell to

Yvonne and told her that he would return the next day. He rode on the snow eagle and headed toward Kunlun Mountain.

Darryl was so happy as he rode the eagle in the sky. That was only the second time he had flown on the snow eagle.

The first occasion was when he rushed back from the Kunlun Mountain to Donghai City to save Yvonne. He was worried during the entire journey.

It was a different feeling then. He looked down to the beautiful scenery as he rode the snow eagle; he felt free.

Darryl patted the snow eagle's head lightly. What a treasure! Not only could it communicate with humans, but it could also fly so quickly. With it, who would even need a car or an aeroplane?

Just as Darryl enjoyed the moment, the snow eagle suddenly cried and started to fly away from their route. It turned toward the mountain on their right.

Chapter 612

It was the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

"Oh, no!"

Darryl was surprised; he patted the snow eagle's neck lightly. "No, that's the wrong way. Kunlun Mountain is not this way."

What happened to the snow eagle? Had it forgotten the way?

The snow eagle chirped softly when it heard Darryl's words, but it continued to fly toward the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

Darryl was confused. "What do you mean? I don't understand you."

Darryl nodded his head. The snow eagle was an intelligent bird; it must have a reason to fly toward the Yellow Dragon Mountain. Darryl decided to stop talking and held on tightly to the snow eagle's neck.

A few minutes later, the snow eagle started to descend and landed on the Yellow Dragon Mountain. There was a cave nearby.

The snow eagle chirped loudly toward the cave and used its head to tap on Darryl's shoulder.

Darryl was not sure what it wanted; he walked forward and looked at the cave. He was shocked!

There were a group of people in the cave. All of them were dressed in their own unique costume.

Darryl realized that some of them were from the Beggars' Sect, a few were from the Giant Whales Sect, and some were from the Island of Peach Blossom Sect. All of them from the smaller sects; there were about a hundred of them.

Among them, a lady attracted Darryl's attention.

The lady wore a long white dress; she looked beautiful, but her hair was all white. She was the eldest daughter of the Island of Peach Blossom Sect, Linda Holt. Darryl had seen her at the dragon slaughter event. Her white hair was very notable.

All of them stood in front of the cave; it seemed like they were in a discussion.

There was a stele in front of the cave; it had some carvings on it. As it was still quite far, Darryl could not see what was carved onto the stele.

The cave could be an ancient tomb. It was located at such a secluded place; why were those people there?

Were there treasures in the tomb?

Darryl patted the snow eagle lightly and

complimented it. "You are so smart. You brought me here because you know that there are treasures here."

Snow eagle chirped lightly and nodded.

The snow eagle amused Darryl; he patted the snow eagle again to praise him.

"Darryl?"

Suddenly, a voice came from behind him.

Sh*t! Darryl was stunned. He turned and was surprised by the view.

A beautiful lady stood there; she was smiling. It was Yvette.

The Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard stood quietly behind her.

Yvette wore dark green sportswear with a pair of sneakers. She looked so fashionable and sexy even though she was in a mountainous area.

Among all the beautiful ladies Darryl had met, Yvette was the one with the sexiest body figure.

Darryl gathered his thoughts and asked, "What are you doing here?"

Yvette smiled and said, "You are here; why can't I be here?"

Then she turned and stared at the group of people in front of the ancient tomb; she had observed them discreetly too.

Darryl was curious. "Why are they gathering at the ancient tomb? Are there treasures in there?"

Yvette smiled. "For the past hundreds of thousands of years, there had been many powerful martial saints. They built their tomb in their own unique ways, with hopes that someday, someone could enter the tomb. Many of them did not have followers, but they did not wish their talents to go wasted after they died. They wanted to pass their knowledge on to someone else."

Yvette looked toward the tomb again. "Even though I don't know the owner of that tomb, I am sure it belongs to a powerful martial saint. Otherwise, no sect would be interested in it."

Chapter 613

Yvette knew about the ancient tomb by accident too.

A few hours ago, her royal guards noticed a group of people had gone up the mountain suspiciously.

Yvette brought Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard with her to check it out without further hesitation.

Once they arrived, they saw Darryl come on the snow eagle.

Yvette looked at the snow eagle and smiled. "The news about Kunlun Sect destroyed in a day—was it done by Elysium Gate?"

Yvette was amazed when she recalled that. She did not believe it when Darryl mentioned that he would destroy the Kunlun Sect. She was speechless when she saw Darryl with the snow eagle.

The snow eagle could only be found in the New World, and her father had given one to Leroy as a gift. She was there when that happened.

"Yes, it was me." Darryl shrugged. "Feeling sad that I destroyed the traitors who joined the New World?"

"You—" Yvette stomped her feet. At that moment, she noticed that the group of people had already

entered the cave.

"They are going in; let's follow them," Yvette said to the two royal guards.

Darry took a deep breath. He could not contain his curiosity; he followed them and left the snow eagle outside the cave.

Once they reached the cave entrance, they could see a dark and deep tunnel.

Darryl could feel intense energy around them. It had to be something powerful. He strolled as he thought about it.

Yvette felt it too; she looked excited as she trailed behind Darryl.

After they walked for about ten minutes, the narrow tunnel got wider. A vast vacant land appeared in front of them. The land was about a few thousand square feet wide. There were thousands of wooden logs on the ground, and each of them was around three feet high.

Darryl furrowed his brows. The wooden log arrangement might have looked random, but there was a specific pattern in it. If he were not wrong, it was a trap.

Darry was surprised to see the group of people, who had entered the cave before them, stood in between

the logs. Their eyes were blood red, and they fought against each other. They killed one another like madmen.

"You're rubbish! How dare you take my treasure? I will kill you!"

"These treasures are mine. I will kill anyone who dares to take it from me!"

Everyone yelled as they attacked each other; there were bloodstains all over the place.

Yvette was terrified when she noticed the scene.

What had happened? They seemed like great acquaintances earlier—the Beggars' Sect, the Island of Peach Blossom Sect and other sects. What had made them kill each other? They were all fine before they entered the cave, and then they wanted to kill one another.

Yvette asked Darryl, "What is wrong with them?"

Sigh.

Darryl took a deep breath as his eyes shone brightly. He replied slowly, "If I am not wrong, the wooden logs are a trap. The formation is a high-level one—The Illusional Formation."

It was recorded in the Bai Qi Formations manual; the Illusional Formation was an extremely

dangerous formation, and it was one of the highest level ones.

Darryl paused before he continued to say, "The Illusional Formation—the unique point about this formation is its ability to create an illusion for a person."

Chapter 614

As he spoke, Darryl pointed toward the group of people who were killing each other. "Those who walked into the trap must have thought they saw some treasures. They are worried that the others would take it from them, so they tried to kill each other."

Darryl was right.

Even though they had agreed to explore the ancient tomb together before they entered the cave, all of them wanted the treasures for themselves.

Once they stepped into the trap formation, they started to hallucinate the treasures were in front of them. That was why they began to kill each other.

"Don't worry." Darryl looked at Yvette. "I have a way to solve it."

Darryl reached out to press on an acupoint at his shoulder. It was the alter acupoint.

As recorded in the Bai Qi Formation manual, one only needed to seal his altar; then they would be able to break the formation; they would not suffer from hallucination.

It was true.

Once he sealed his altar acupoint, Darryl could feel that his mind was clear and alert.

Then he turned to Yvette and smiled. "Come, let me seal your altar acupoint."

Right at that moment, Yvette trembled and knelt on the ground. Then she looked at Darryl happily, "Father! Greetings, my father."

What? Why did she address Darryl as her father?

Darryl was stunned, but he quickly gathered his thoughts. He was a little too late, Yvette had already started to hallucinate.

It had been almost two months when Yvette left for the World Universe. Even though she had always looked strong, she missed her father and the New World.

Yvette was affected by the formation; she hallucinated that Darryl was the New World's Emperor.

Darryl thought it was amusing. 'How funny! Yvette thinks that I am her father.'

Darryl laughed before he took his cell phone to record Yvette's action. He had to record that moment for remembrance.

"Daughter, massage my feet." Darryl started to joke

with her.

"Yes, Father." Yvette nodded and knelt in front of Darryl. As she massaged his feet, she asked, "Father, is this comfortable?"

"Yes, yes." Darryl laughed.

After a while, Yvette stood and hugged Darryl. "Father, I've missed you very much..."

Since she was young, Yvette was her father's favorite child; she had always been close to her father. She did not know that the person in front of her was Darryl and not her father.

Wow!

Darryl's heart melted when Yvette hugged him; he could smell the lovely scent on her body.

Yvette had the perfect body, and she looked alluring.

After he had hugged her for a while, and when he was done with the recording, Darryl smiled and then proceeded to seal Yvette's alter acupoint.

Yvette immediately trembled and then, her mind was clear.

Yvette's face was scarlet red; she struggled to get out of Darryl's hug. She stared angrily at him. "What are you doing? How dare you take advantage of me?"

'What a terrible man! He hugged me when I was having illusions.'

Chapter 615

Darryl smiled and said, "My dear Princess, you were the one who hugged me. I already have a wife, but you still came and embraced me. How can you be angry when I am not?"

"You're rubbish!" Yvette bit her lips. How could she have hugged him?

Darryl waved his hands. "As I have said earlier, the formation will cause one to have illusions."

Then he showed Yvette the video recordings on his cellphone.

The video showed how Yvette had hugged Darryl and said, "Father, I've missed you very much..."

Yvette's face was red when she saw the video.

"Shut the video at once," Yvette demanded as she snatched Darryl's cell phone to close the video.

It seemed like she did have an illusion; she had taken Darryl as her father. How shameful!

Yvette had learned formations with her master for many years, but she had never heard about a formation that could cause hallucinations.

Not only had Darryl heard about the formation, he

knew the way to break it too. She wondered about his strength.

Suddenly, a voice came from behind them. "Princess.."

Yvette turned and was stunned.

Just a few feet away, Royal Rat Guard experienced his hallucinations. He hugged Royal Ox Guard tightly and said, "Princess! Princess Yvette, you are so beautiful, I want to spend the rest of my life with you! I can do anything for you! My life is only complete if I can spend the night with you. I know it is impossible. You are the Princess, and I am just the servant. I have promised your father that I will always protect you; we could never be together..."

It was apparent that Royal Rat Guard was in a hallucination; he had thought Royal Ox Guard as Yvette.

Darryl was stunned, but he started to laugh. "Princess, it seems like you have many admirers. He just said that his life is only complete if he can spend the night with you."

"Shut up!"

Yvette felt so embarrassed; her face was as red as an apple.

How could Royal Rat Guard say all those in front of

Darryl? What an embarrassment!

Yvette stomped her feet when Darryl laughed. "Stop laughing; make them stop."

Darryl smiled and walked toward them; then he sealed the acupoint for the both of them.

Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard regained their clear minds immediately.

"Hey silly Ox, why are you hugging me?"

"Shi*t, you stinky Rat! Get down from my body."

Both of them started to argue. The scene amused Darryl. How funny was that?

Yvette was angry and embarrassed. "Stop it, both of you. Keep quiet."

They immediately stopped.

"Alright, we are all fine now. Let's go inside to have a look." Darryl waved his hands and walked toward the tomb excitedly.

A person who could set an Illusion Formation near his own grave; he must have been an extraordinary person. Darryl must find out who that was.

Over ten feet away, the group of people still fought against each other. Among the one hundred people who went into the cave, only about less than ten

people left!

Chapter 616

Those who were not dead were covered in blood. They were still fighting against each other, and it did not seem like they would quit soon.

Only one lady who did not seem to have moved.

It was Linda Holt.

Linda leaned against one of the wooden logs as she talked to herself emotionally. It was apparent that she was hallucinating, but her illusions were different from the rest.

Darryl approached her so that he could hear what she said.

"Even though the Island of Peach Blossom Sect is just a small group, we will never be traitors. All of you—leave at once! Go back to where you belong, back to the New World."

Darryl was shocked to hear that; he respected her decision.

It seemed like the New World went to recruit the Island of Peach Blossom Sect, but they did not give in to their demands.

Darryl was impressed by Linda's decision. Without

any hesitation, he walked toward her and sealed her acupoint.

Linda trembled and her mind immediately cleared.

Linda was shocked to see Darryl in front of her. "Darryl, what are you doing here?"

She was also shocked to see the group of people fighting against each other. "What are they doing?"

Darryl smiled as he looked at her. "You were hallucinating. It is dangerous here; you should leave immediately."

Then Darryl turned and walked toward Yvette.

Linda was stunned as she saw Darryl left. He was the one who helped to get her out of the illusions.

Everyone said that Darryl had caused his grandfather's death, violated his siblings and joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect. However, Linda felt that Darryl was not like the devil they said he was.

Yvette teased him when Darryl returned to her. "What a gentleman, Sect Master Darby! You ignored everyone else, and only helped the Island of Peach Blossom Sect's daughter."

She added, "Linda is young and beautiful. Even though her hair is all white, she still looks

attractive. Are you attracted to her?"

Darryl smiled but did not explain further.

Darryl saved Linda because she did not join the New World; how could he tell that to Yvette?

However, Darryl could not help but teased her, "Princess Yvette, are you jealous?"

Yvette bit her lips and said, "You overestimate yourself!"

How dared Darryl say such things to her!

"Very well, then. I will not say another word, my dear daughter." Darryl waved his hands.

"You—" Yvette was furious; she reached out to hit Darryl.

She was still embarrassed over the incident.

Darryl laughed and started to run; Yvette chased after him.

When Royal Ox Guard and Royal Rat Guard regained their senses, Darryl and Yvette were already out of their line of sight.

"Princess!" Royal Ox Guard shouted.

"I think she went after Darryl," Royal Rat Guard replied.

"Why are you still standing there? Go and look for

her! You're useless!" Royal Ox Guard shouted.

"Sh*t! You are responsible for the princess, too!"
Royal Rat Guard replied. Both of them argued as
they headed to look for Yvette.

Chapter 617

Darryl and Yvette ran and chased after each other until they reached the end of the formation and into a deep tunnel.

There was a secret room at the end of the tunnel; it was only a few square meters wide.

Once they reached the secret room, Darryl stopped and smiled at Yvette. "Enough, my dear daughter, I am tired and could not run anymore."

He looked around the secret room as he said that.

That was the end of the ancient tomb? It looked relatively small.

They said there were treasures; so, where were they?

Yvette panted as she said, "Darryl, you are not to mention the incident ever again!"

Then she lifted her foot to kick Darryl, but she missed, and it landed on the wall.

The ground started to vibrate and collapsed.

"Argh!" Darryl and Yvette started to fall.

Yvette had accidentally kicked on the activation button on the wall.

Both of them started to descend. Yvette screamed as she grabbed onto Darryl.

The hole was about twenty feet down. Darryl crashed onto the ground first, and Yvette landed on him.

Darryl's head spun from the fall.

It was lucky that Darryl was a Martial Saint. Otherwise, he might not have survived the fall.

"Darryl, this is all your fault. We wouldn't have fallen here otherwise." Yvette was annoyed. "If you ever mention my hallucination again, I will never forgive you."

She reached out to touch her face. She wanted to make sure that her face was not hurt.

Darryl laughed. "I am the one who landed on the ground and then became your cushion. Why would you have any injury?"

Darryl cleared his throat and said, "Can you let me stand up now?"

Yvette had a perfect body figure. However, Darryl was in pain from the fall; how could he enjoy Yvette's body on his.

"Sorry." After she heard that, she realized where she was. Her face was scarlet red; she stood up

immediately.

Yvette was worried about him. "Are you alright?"

Darryl stood up and replied calmly, "I am fine, my dear daughter."

"Darryl!" Yvette was annoyed and was about to start a fight again. Suddenly, they heard an unusual sound.

Hiss!

Hiss!

The sound was unusual beyond any description. It sounded intimidating.

Darryl looked toward the location of the sound, and he was shocked. A two-foot tall, dark shadow moved toward them.

Hiss!

Darryl felt fear down his spine; he took a deep breath.

Chapter 618

It was a giant scorpion, and it moved toward them. The scorpion was about two feet long. It was a two feet long scorpion! His body was shiny-black, and its shell looked as hard as iron armor; it looked indestructible.

The giant insect had blood-red eyes; they looked like red rubies.

"Is that the Red Eye King Scorpion?"

Yvette shivered and shouted.

Darryl was shocked when he heard that. "You know about this thing?"

The Red Eye King Scorpion charged at them.

Yvette was the closest to it; she was swept by its tail and bounced into the air.

Bang!

She hit the stone wall before she landed on the ground. She vomited a mouthful of blood; her face was pale.

"Are you alright?" Darryl asked. He did not expect to see such a giant scorpion.

That hit even seemed effortless.

Yvette coughed; she was seriously injured. She said hurriedly, "It's the Red Eye King Scorpion. It only appears in ancient tombs and is extremely poisonous. Due to its long duration in the tomb, it will attack any human that it sees. Be careful!"

Right after she said that, the Red Eye Scorpion King roared and charged toward Darryl at an unimaginably high speed.

Darryl had the blood-drinking sword in his hand; he aimed it at the scorpion.

Darryl could not use his internal energy as the strong vibration might cause the ancient tomb to collapse. He had no choice but to use a weapon. No matter how strong the shell, the blood-drinking sword should be able to pierce through it.

Roar!

The king scorpion roared in pain as the blood-drinking sword pierced through its shell. It swept Darryl up, and he flew through the air.

Bang!

Darryl flew more than ten feet, and he landed on his stomach. Fresh blood sprayed from his lips.

The Red Eye King Scorpion raised its tail and aimed it at Darryl.

"Watch out, Darryl!" Yvette shouted.

Darryl sweated. The scorpion's tail was poisonous. The Red Eye King Scorpion was the king of the scorpions, so its poison could be worse. He might not survive it.

Darryl wanted to hide, but it was too late; the Red Eye King Scorpion was too fast for him.

It pierced its tail into Darryl's back and released the venom into his body.

"Argh!" Darryl shouted in pain. At the same time, he pierced his sword into the giant scorpion and took its life. The scorpion struggled on the ground and for a short while before it became motionless. It had died.

Darryl held his fists tightly. He felt numb on his back, and then he could no longer feel his body. He paled.

The next second, Darryl dropped onto the ground as he shook uncontrollably.

"Darryl! How are you feeling?" Yvette rushed toward him.

Darryl's lips quivered, but he could not speak. His whole body felt weak. Would he die?

Darryl's heart was filled with regrets. He thought

that he would find treasures in the ancient tomb. He did not expect to see a Red Eye King Scorpion before he could find the treasure. He also did not foresee that a scorpion would poison him.

Chapter 619

Yvette was worried when she saw Darryl's pale face.
"Hang in there, Darryl."

Darryl smiled bitterly. "I am afraid that I can't. The venom had entered my bloodstream."

"Oh, yes, I have an idea! I know how to save you!"
Yvette stood up immediately and rushed toward the dead Red Eye King Scorpion. She took the blood-drinking sword and dug out its eyes.

What did she want to do?

Darryl was not sure about Yvette's plan.

The woman returned with a pair of scorpion eyes, and her face was filled with excitement. "Open your mouth; this should cure the venom."

Yvette explained, "I read it in an old scripture at the New World. It was recorded that the Red Eye Kind Scorpion's eyes were also its soul."

Yvette continued to say, "You just needed to eat its soul, and it would cure the venom in your body. Also, no venom could poison you from here onward. However, no one had tried this for the past thousands of years as the Red Eye King Scorpion was not easily located."

As she spoke, she fed the eyes into Darryl's mouth.

Darryl could immediately feel the warmth in his body.

"I'll be cured after this? I will not get worse?" Darryl asked.

"You talked too much," Yvette replied.

After about ten minutes, Darryl's face looked much better. The numbness on his body had disappeared too.

It was incredible what the Red Eye King Scorpion's eyes could do. Darryl stood up and realized that the poison in his body had disappeared.

"I've saved your life. You must thank me for that." Yvette smiled.

Darryl did not say anything further; he took out his cell phone and turned on the torchlight. He was worried that another monster would appear in front of them again.

However, both of them were shocked when they saw what was in front of them.

About ten feet away, there was a huge crystal coffin; it was shiny and sparkling.

The body of a man laid in the coffin.

The man had snowy white hair, and he wore silver armor; a dragon was engraved on it. The man laid there motionlessly; they were not sure how long it had been since he had passed away. He still looked admirable.

The man was the owner of the ancient tomb.

Darryl walked toward the coffin with Yvette; he was amazed.

"Such a huge crystal coffin, and he's wearing silver armor. He must have been someone of significant importance when he was alive." Yvette sighed.

Darryl nodded as he looked around.

There was a stone stele beside the crystal coffin. It was about five feet tall, and it had words engraved on it.

Yvette rushed forward and looked at the stele. "Zhao Yun, also named Zilong, General of—"

Zhao Yun? They were in Zhao Yun's tomb? He was the God of Martial Arts, Zhao Zilong!

Darryl's mind went blank. He rushed toward the stele; he was utterly in shock.

Everyone had heard about Zhao Zilong! He had battled wars his whole life, and he had never been defeated. He was also known as the God of Martial

Arts.

They were in Zhao Zilong's tomb. How surreal!

Yvette saw Darryl's reaction. "What happened to you? Have you gone crazy?"

Yvette was from the New World, so she was not familiar with World Natural's history. Naturally, she had never heard about Zhao Zilong.

Darryl was still in shock.

Yvonne continued to read. "I have never accepted any student in my life. I hope that after I die, someone will be able to carry on my knowledge."

Yvonne sighed. "I have set a formation in my tomb, so not many people would be able to go through that. If you are reading this, you must have already passed the formation. Our connection has been destined. With that, I shall give you a set of my martial arts knowledge. It is engraved at the back of this stele, and I will also give you two Infinite Power Pills."

A set of martial art knowledge and two Infinite Power Pills?

Darryl was so excited. He rushed to check the back of the stele.

It was true; the scripture was engraved at the stele's

back, and under the stairs, there was a unique box. The box looked exquisite, even though it was made a few thousand years ago.

Chapter 620

Darryl took the box and opened it without any hesitation.

Once he opened the box, a ray of golden light shone through it. Two pills were in the box; they were gold and shiny.

They were the Infinite Power Pills!

"Infinite Power Pill; it's the Infinite Power Pill!"
Daryl was so excited that his voice shook.

Everyone believed that the Qing Emperor had gathered everyone he could find to create an elixir for immortality. They had failed to achieve that. Instead, they made the Infinite Power Pill.

One could only consume the Infinite Power Pill once in a lifetime. Any Master General who took it would be able to upgrade his power by three levels immediately.

A Level One Master General would be upgraded to Level Four Master General after they consumed it, and a Level One Martial Saint would be upgraded to Level Four Martial Saint.

The Infinite Power Pill was one of the rarest elixirs in the world. After the fall of the Qing Dynasty, the

method to make the pill was lost.

The Infinite Elixir Manual only mentioned the Infinite Power Pill briefly, but it had not recorded any method to make it.

Darryl did not expect to find two Infinite Power Pills at the tomb.

Darryl and Yvette looked at each other, and both of them immediately popped a pill each into their mouth.

They could immediately feel the explosion of energy in their body!

Both of them sat on the floor as they felt their power continued to upgrade itself.

About three hours later, they had managed to absorb the Infinite Power Pill's effect fully. Darryl opened his eyes; he was delighted.

As expected, he was upgraded by three levels; he was a Level Four Martial Saint.

Darryl felt so excited. He threw some punches; he could feel that his power was much stronger than before that.

Then he looked at the stele again for information about the martial arts.

He mumbled, "The Immortal Energy Palm!" What

a name!

Darryl took a deep breath as he sat on the ground to look at the scriptures on the stele. Then he started to cultivate.

Yvette was equally excited. She sat beside Darryl and started to cultivate as well.

The Immortal Power Palm was very complicated; it was hard to understand and cultivate.

They concentrated on the cultivation; they did not even notice that more time had passed.

It had been a few days, and Darryl and Yvette were still in cultivation.

...

At Elysian Island.

It was chaotic in the main hall.

Dozens of maids were busy with decorations for a dinner reception.

It was an important day. The New World ambassadors would arrive at Elysian Island, and the sect master had set up a dinner reception to welcome them.

It was a night of unlimited supplies of alcohol and food. It was time for everyone to relax and have a

good time.

The Cult Mistress, Monica Vaughn, walked up and down the corridor outside her room. She looked nervous and unsettled. She was about to set a fire and leave Elysian Island at night.

At that moment, an elite member rushed forward. He was a closet follower, and Monica trusted him. She asked desperately, "Any news about Darryl?"

When Darryl left, he had promised to take her away from Elysian Island that night.

However, it had been so many days, and Darryl had not contacted her. Monica had no choice but to send someone to look for him.

The member replied, "Cult Mistress, I have searched all over Donghai City, but there is no trace of Elder Master."

Monica was worried when she heard that. She waved her hands and said, "That's fine. You may leave now."

'What happened? Why isn't Darryl here for me yet? Did he forget about me?' Monica thought nervously.

The dinner reception would commence in two hours. She would deliberately cause a fire and fake her death in it. Then she should be able to escape the island.

**How could she leave Elysian Island without Darryl?
Even if she could, where should she go?**

Chapter 621

Monica bit her lips; she was nervous.

She decided to go ahead as planned to leave Elysian Island even if Darryl did not show up.

The night was the best time to leave the island; she would not get another chance if she were to miss that.

...

It was eight o'clock at night.

Everyone enjoyed their time at the dinner reception in the main hall.

Monica drank some alcohol and then bid farewell to the Grand Master of Heaven; she said she was not well. Then she returned to her room.

Grand Master of Heaven did not notice anything unusual as Monica had never been able to hold her liquor.

Once she was back at her room, Monica changed to an ordinary dress. She put on very simple makeup to avoid unnecessary attention.

Once everything was set, she took a torch, lit it and threw it onto her bed.

Soon, a massive fire broke out, and the fire had spread to a few houses nearby.

Monica bit her lips and ran toward the alley without another look back.

She had expected some trouble along the way, but nothing terrible happened. She arrived at the beach smoothly.

She jumped into one of the fishing boats and started the engine. As the boat moved, the Cult Mistress turned and looked at the fire at Elysian Island. She smiled.

Finally, she left.

At the same time, Darryl's image appeared in her mind.

'Darryl, where are you, why didn't you come for me? I shall go to Donghai City to look for you,' Monica thought.

Monica bit her lips until it bled.

The fishing boat moved very slowly. After a night on the boat, Monica finally arrived at Donghai City.

Monica was so excited when she left Elysian Island. Once she was ashore, she realized that she was in trouble.

She only knew that Darryl was in Donghai City. She

did not ask about where he lived. Most importantly, Monica had not used a cell phone for the years she was on the island.

She had a big problem. How could she find Darryl in such a vast city like Donghai City?

What should she do?

She stood by the shore; she looked beautiful but worried.

"My beautiful lady, do you need any help?" A suspicious man approached her with a smile.

That was Jay Nedley. He was a jobless petty thief; he stole what he could for a living.

Jay had noticed Monica when she came ashore.

He had many years of experience as a thief; he knew that the clutch in Monica's hand was a valuable item. There must be in the clutch too.

He was right. Monica's clutch was a custom-made one, and it was made from gold fabric. The material was an extremely rare one. Even though it was gold, it was as soft as a fabric.

Monica had brought all her jewellery with her when she left Elysian Island. She knew that she could trade them for money.

As she had left in a hurry, an agate bracelet hung

out of her clutch.

Jay was excited. It was his chance to get rich!

Jay looked away from the clutch to look at Monica.

What a beauty!

She looked as elegant as a goddess.

Jay gulped. "My beautiful lady, do you need any help?"

"No, thank you," Monica replied without any hesitation.

Then she headed to the road.

Monica had a plan in mind. Once she reached the city, she would trade her jewellery for cash and continue her journey to look for Daryl.

Jay did not give up. He followed her quickly. "You look like you are not from around here. I have no bad intentions. Just wanted to offer you some help since you are alone."

Monica stopped and looked at him. "I am here for someone. Do you know anyone named Darryl Darby?"

Even though he looked suspicious, she did not want to miss out on an opportunity.

Darryl?

Jay asked, "Is he a student from the Hexad School?"

Jay had been in town for a very long time, so he had many sources for news. Darryl was the Lyndon family's live-in son-in-law, he crashed Yvonne's wedding, and he was severely injured by Abbess Mother Serendipity. He had heard all about it.

Monica was delighted; she nodded. "Yes, yes, that's him! Do you know where he lives?"

Jay replied quickly, "You have asked the right person. Darryl and I are friends. I would visit him at his home, so, of course, I know where he lives."

Monica was so happy to hear that. "Can you take me there?"

That was the chance that Jay had waited for.

Jay smiled. "Of course, Darryl and I are friends. You can be my friend too. How could I not help you?"

He pointed toward a random neighborhood in front of them. "Darryl lives there, come with me."

He started to lead the way.

Monica followed him closely. She was so excited when she thought about meeting Darryl soon.

However, she did not let down her guard. Along the way, she asked further questions about Darryl.

Jay answered all of them, effortlessly. He replied with what he had heard. Darryl was famous in Donghai City, and with all the troubles he had got into—the lion slaughter event, crashing other people's wedding—everyone in Donghai City would have heard some news about him.

Monica started to trust Jay and decided to let her guard down around him.

How could he know so much about Darryl if he was not his friend? Soon, she followed Jay into a neighborhood.

The neighborhood looked like it had been abandoned for some time. There were very few people left.

Jay led the Cult Mistress to a building at the end of the street.

He opened the door and let her into the corridor.

Chapter 622

The building was an ancient one with no elevator. They walked up to the second floor when Jay stopped and said to the Sect Mistress, "My beautiful lady, this is where Darryl lives, go on and knock on the door."

Monica walked toward the door.

Right at that moment, Jay smiled and snatched the clutch when Monica was not paying attention. Then he turned around and started to run.

"You—" Monica shouted. She did not expect him to snatch her clutch. Was he not Darryl's friend? How disgraceful!

Monica had lived at Elysian Island as the Sect Mistress for quite some time. She had never been conned before that.

When she regained her senses, Jay was nowhere to be seen.

Monica bit her lips; she was furious, but she did not chase after him. Even though the clutch was valuable, she did not need the money as she had found Darryl.

Then she knocked twice on the door.

The Cult Mistress was so excited as she waited for Darryl to open the door.

Soon, the door opened. A middle-aged lady stood there as she looked at her. "Who are you looking for?"

"I am—" Monica was nervous. "I am looking for Darryl Darby."

'Who is this lady? Is she a cleaner?' Monica thought.

The middle-aged lady replied impatiently, "Darryl? There is no Darryl here. You have gotten the wrong address."

Then she slammed the door shut.

What?

Wrong address?

Monica stood there; she did not know what to do. She was nervous and angry.

When she finally gathered her thoughts, she realized that the man was only a thief.

Monica felt lost as she walked out of the neighborhood. Not only she did not manage to look for Darryl, but her clutch was stolen too. She had no money with her.

"Luckily, I did not lose these two books," Monica

mumbled to herself as she took the two books from her coat.

They were two volumes of the Supreme Mystery Scriptures!

Before Monica left Elysian Island, she had secretly taken the books from the Cult Master's room.

The Grandmaster Heaven Cult had joined the New World, so the two scriptures should not stay with them. That was what Monica thought. She put the scriptures away and wandered on the road.

She felt lost in a city that she had never visited.

She did not know where to go. She had no money, so she sat on a bench outside a mall. The day got darker, and Monica started to worry.

Donghai City was so massive; how could she find Darryl if she just sat there? She decided to ask around if anyone knew about Darryl.

Even though the chances were slim, it was still better than to sit there and wait for him to show himself.

It got darker; the mall was about to close. Many people walked out of the mall.

Monica hesitated before she walked up to a young man and asked, "Excuse me, do you know Darryl

Darby?"

Even though Monica was conned earlier that night, she had no choice but to try again.

She had no money with her; she could not just sit and wait.

No matter what, she had to find Darryl.

The young man looked at her and replied, "You should go to the Lyndon residence to look for Darryl."

The young man tried to be sarcastic. Darryl was notorious in Donghai City; everyone had heard about him.

Monica did not expect a random person would know about Darryl.

She furrowed her brows when she heard his words.

Why would one go to the Lyndon residence to find Darryl?

Chapter 623

Monica wanted to ask more questions, but the young man had walked away.

After she asked a few other persons, Monica finally managed to find Lyndon residence's address. She decided to go straight there.

...

At the Lyndon residence.

Grandmother Lyndon had her morning tea in the hall.

A few of the younger members in the family chatted together happily.

Darryl, their live-in son-in-law, had made the Lyndon family a joke in Donghai City. Finally, they got rid of him.

A young boy walked into the hall and shouted, "Grandmother, there is a lady outside, and she's looking for Darryl."

A woman who looked for Darryl?

Grandmother Lyndon furrowed her brows when she heard the name. "Go! Go and check it out."

She strode toward the main hall, and the rest of the

family trailed behind her.

Monica was at the door.

Everyone was shocked to see her. She looked beautiful, attractive, and she had a sexy body.

"Who are you?" Grandmother Lyndon asked.

Monica smiled. "Excuse me, does Darryl live here?"

"What is your relationship with Darryl?" the grandmother asked.

The rest of the Lyndon family quietly looked at Monica, especially William.

How was the beautiful lady related to Darryl?

Was she another one of Darryl's women? Sh*t, how many affairs did he have?

Yvonne was one, and another one had appeared.

Monica felt uneasy as they stared at her. She forced a smile. "I am Darryl's friend."

Friend?

William smiled coldly. "I guess you are one of his mistresses. You looked beautiful and elegant, but you are just a cheap woman."

William's words ignited the fire in everyone. Everyone started to comment on her.

"What a cheap woman!"

"How evil is this woman?"

Everyone started to scold her.

Monica trembled in anger. "You—what are you all talking about?"

Everyone at Elysian Island fully respected her. She had never been scolded in such a manner.

"Alright, silence!" Grandmother Lyndon walked toward with her walking stick.

She looked at Monica. "Darryl is not here. The bastard is no longer related to the Lyndon family."

"Then—" Monica asked desperately, "Does he have any relatives in Donghai City?"

Grandmother Lyndon replied coldly, "He is the Darby family's second son. All his relatives are there at the Darby residence."

After that, the old grandmother led everyone back into the house.

Before she left, she turned and said, "Take care of yourself and your dignity as a woman. What do you get as Darryl's mistress? You are just a b*tch."

The door slammed shut after that.

Monica stood outside the house; her body trembled.

She was so ashamed and angry; she wanted to cry.

Chapter 624

The Cult Mistress felt really sad. She went to the Lyndon family with hope; she did not expect to be humiliated.

Monica bit her lips; she felt terrible. She waited a short while to calm down before she left the Lyndon residence. Then she headed to the Darby residence.

Grandmother Lyndon mentioned that Darryl's relatives were all at the Darby residence. She had to go and find out about that herself.

Half an hour later, at the Darby residence.

The Darby family had undertaken a large mall project.

The project was worth about ten billion bucks. Everyone had been very busy for the past few days; everyone was out for business. Yumi was the only one left at home. She checked the accounts to get the Darby family's income for the month.

One of the Darby family members ran toward her. "Sister, there is a lady at the door. She is looking for Darryl."

A woman was there for Darryl?

Yumi smiled. Someone had looked for Darryl at the Darby family's home? Everyone in Donghai City knew that Darryl had been banished from the family.

Yumi did not plan to meet her, but she was curious, so she went to the door.

About half an hour later.

The Cult Mistress sat anxiously in the hall as she waited for Darryl.

Yumi walked out to the hall. She was attracted by the Cult Mistress when she saw her.

The beautiful lady did not look familiar. She should be from somewhere significant; she did not seem like an ordinary person.

Yumi did not ask her to leave immediately. She asked Monica curiously, "How are you related to Darryl? Why are you looking for Darryl?" Then she added, "I am Darryl's sister-in-law."

Monica replied to her immediately when she heard that Yumi was Darryl's sister-in-law, "I am Darryl's good friend."

A good friend of Darryl?

Yumi was surprised; she smiled. When she saw Monica's scarlet red face, she believed that they

definitely had an unusual relationship.

Darryl seemed to have an affair with everyone.

"Sister, is Darryl here?" Monica asked excitedly.

Monica was exhausted. She had not had any food or water the entire day, and the Lyndon family had scolded her.

"Hmm..." Yumi smiled sarcastically. "He does not live here. From what I know, he is not at Donghai City."

Yumi was lying as she had no idea where the useless Darryl was.

'Darryl is not at Donghai City? What shall I do?'

Monica was worried.

Monica was not sure what else to do. "Sister, I have just arrived in Donghai City, and all my money got stolen. I have nowhere to go." Monica had hoped that Yumi would let her stay as she had no money with her.

Yumi understood what Monica meant. She pretended to give it a thought before she said, "I am his sister-in-law, I should make some arrangements for you. However, the Darby residence is fully occupied. Besides, our family business is not doing well, so I could not give you any money too."

Monica was disappointed. She bit her lips and said, "I am not demanding anything. I just needed a place to stay and some food to eat while I waited for Darryl to return."

She had no other options.

Yumi smiled as she pretended to care. "Don't worry, you are Darryl's friend, so that makes us family. I will not let you go homeless."

Yumi continued to say, "Why don't I get a job for you? You can stay there and earn some money. I will let you know if I have any news from Darryl. What do you think?"

"That's great," Monica replied without any hesitation as she nodded. "Thank you so much."

The Cult Mistress sighed in relief. Finally, she had a place to stay. She still believed that Darryl's sister-in-law would never harm her.

"Great. Let me arrange something for you." Yumi stood up and reached for the phone.

Yumi's friend had opened a karaoke bar.

Yumi planned to recommend Monica to work there —Darryl's mistress with a job at such a place; he would be furious.

Yumi could not stop laughing when she thought of

that. She spoke softly into the phone, "Hi, I heard that you needed some help at your bar. I can recommend a beautiful lady."

The Cult Mistress sat there; she did not know what she would face soon.

Yumi ended the call and walked back to the hall with a smile. She gave the bar's address to Monica and told her the job had been arranged.

...

Half an hour later.

Monica arrived at the address that Yumi had given her; it was a newly opened karaoke bar.

Monica felt something not right when she arrived, but she kept her silence.

Darryl's sister-in-law had recommended her, perhaps the people there would take care of her.

The bar manager, a lady with really thick makeup, was Janette. Most people address her as Sister Janette.

Janette looked at Monica and nodded satisfactorily. "Not bad, such a beauty."

Janette's stare made Monica feel uncomfortable. She was not sure why she looked at her in such a manner.

"Sister Janette, thank you for taking care of me,"
Monica said lightly.

Janette smiled, "Don't worry; I will surely take care
of you."

Yumi had mentioned in the call not to make any
special arrangement or take extra care of Monica—
no special treatment.

Chapter 625

At the ancient tomb in the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

Darryl and Yvette were still beside the crystal coffin; they were still in cultivation.

The Immortal Energy Palm was remarkably unique. After so many days, Darryl had yet to figure out the entire cultivation process completely. It looked like they still needed some more time.

Darryl and Yvette were so focused on their cultivation that they had forgotten where they were.

For the past few days, when Darryl was in cultivation, two significant incidents had happened.

First, it was the Elysium Gate.

The Elysium Gate had destroyed a few dark powers over the past few days. Everyone was so grateful to them.

The other incident was that a new sect had risen; it was the Flower Mountain Sect, and Dax was the Sect Master.

The Flower Mountain Sect had about ten thousand members since it started. Everyone wondered how a new sect could have ten thousand members.

After Darryl, Dax and Chester destroyed the Kunlun Sect, they captured all the members alive. Then Dax got all of them to join his Flower Mountain Sect.

...

At Kunlun Town.

It was a small town, located just below the Kunlun Mountain. It was well-known due to the Kunlun Sect.

Dax and Chester were in a bar at Kunlun Town for drinks. Their table had a lot of delicious food.

Dax was proud and happy ever since he set up the Flower Mountain Sect.

Chester asked, "Dax, how did you come up with the name—Flower Mountain Sect? Do you want to be the Monkey King?"

Even though Chester was proud of Dax's new Sect, he thought that the name was too funny.

Dax laughed. "Darry was the one who thought of the name. He mentioned it when I was talking about setting up a new sect. Come think about it; it is quite a funny name."

Both of them looked at each other and laughed.

"Oh, right." Dax suddenly took out his cell phone

and complained, "I called Darryl the other day to get him to meet us at the Kunlun Mountain to take a look at Leroy's treasure. He said that he would be there. It has been a few days now, and he is still not here, and I can't reach his cellphone."

Chester sighed. "Yes, what is he up to? I thought we could give him a surprise."

He reached out for a scripture.

The scripture had a green cover, and the words 'Supreme Mystery Scripture' was written on its surface.

They had found the scripture in Leroy's treasure vault.

...

At the Carter family.

It was already autumn.

The Carter Mansion was very chaotic; it was a happy atmosphere.

Sara's birthday was in three days; everyone would be there for her birthday party.

Sara was in her room.

There were many golden masks on the shelf near the door; all the masks were unique.

The Elysium Gate members would be surprised if they were to see that.

The masks were the symbol of Sect Master Indomitable Darby. Everyone knew that the Indomitable Darby would put on a golden mask each time he appeared.

There were several Nine Dragons Justice Flags beside Sara's bed too.

Sara was a big fan of the Elysium Gate. She admired the Indomitable Darby; it was her dream to meet the man.

When she heard about how Elysium Gate had destroyed a few dark powers, Sara admired the Indomitable Darby even more. She thought that he was the world's greatest hero. She took a golden mask and wiped it carefully.

Chapter 626

Her father was Zoran, and her mother was Susan. She also had a sister, Rachel. Her family stood behind her. Everyone smiled as they looked at her.

Susan was worried. Her daughter admired the Indomitable Darby deeply—her room was filled with flags and masks.

Sara put on the mask she had just wiped and asked Rachel, "How do I look, Sister? Do I look like Indomitable Darby?"

Rachel laughed. "I had never met Indomitable Darby. Besides, all your masks are not genuine; they are just copies."

Then Rachel took a golden mask and wore it over her face.

Rachel also admired Indomitable Darby. All ladies would admire a hero like him.

Sara laughed. "When I meet him in the future, maybe he'd give me a real golden mask."

Susan and Zoran looked at each other and smiled when they heard what their daughter had said.

Susan said, "Sara, your 18th birthday is in three

days. Do you have any wishes?"

Zoran smiled. "You're an adult once you are 18 years old. Tell me your wishes, and I will try my best to fulfil it for you."

"Really?!"

Sara was excited; she immediately said, "I have two wishes! My first wish is that my brother, Darryl, can make it to my party."

She had not seen her brother for a while; she missed him.

Darryl? Zoran and Susan smiled.

Darryl was their godson. He would definitely be there for his godsister's birthday party.

Zoran nodded. "Very well, I will give him a call later."
"

"Great!" Sara nodded and then continued to say, "My second wish is that Indomitable Darby will come to my birthday party."

Sara was a little embarrassed.

All her friends admired Indomitable Darby. They would definitely be jealous of her if he attended her party.

She looked forward to it.

Zoran was shocked, but he smiled.

It was the Elysium Gate's Sect Master; there was no way for Zoran to contact him. How would he send the invitation to him?

Before Zoran could reply, Rachel said, "Sister, Indomitable Darby is a hero, and I support your second wish. As for Darryl, he is a nobody."

Rachel was annoyed when she heard Darryl's name.

Sara replied, "Darryl is our brother. I think that he is as powerful as Indomitable Darby. Don't forget; he can produce elixirs too."

Sara had never understood the reason Rachel disliked Darryl. She felt that he was a nice person.

Rachel replied, "You may admit that Darryl is your brother, but I won't."

She continued to say, "Darryl and Indomitable Darby have the same last name. However, they are different. How could you compare both of them?"

To Rachel, Indomitable Darby was the only hero for her. It was an insult to compare Darryl with him.

Zoran furrowed his brows. "Rachel, why do you say that about your brother?"

Rachel was out of line. Susan also nodded; she

wanted Rachel to stop talking. She had begged Darryl multiple times before he promised not to speak about the peach blossom forest incident again.

Rachel did not notice Susan's signal. She continued to say, "Father, I am right. Indomitable Darby had defeated the Ten Villains, the Coastline Sect and the Spirit Flame Sect. Those were all great deeds."

Rachel smirked. "What about Darryl? He is just a useless person whom everyone despises."

Chapter 627

Zoran was annoyed when he heard Rachel belittled Darryl.

Susan sensed that the atmosphere was not right. "Fine, let's not talk about this anymore."

Susan looked at Sara and said, "Sara, we'll try to help you with your second wish, but we don't even know Indomitable Darby's real identity."

Zoran said, "That is right, no one had ever met him, and no one knew what he looks like, or how old he is."

"I don't care; I want to meet him." Sara insisted as she hugged Susan.

Susan smiled and looked at Zoran. "Why don't we get someone to send the invitation card to the Elysium Gate. Maybe Brother Indomitable Darby would come."

Even though she had not met him, Susan believed that the Elysium Gate Sect Master would be someone much older than her. That was why she addressed him as a brother.

"Fine." Zoran nodded.

He would try his best to fulfil his daughter's 18th

birthday wishes.

...

More time had passed at the ancient tomb at the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

Sigh.

Darryl took a deep breath and opened his eyes slowly—a bright light shone from his eyes!

He rose from the ground slowly.

Darryl felt the energy raised from his body; the atmosphere spun.

He had completed the Immortal Energy Palm cultivation.

Darryl smiled; he was excited. His trip to the ancient tomb had been very fruitful. Not only was he upgraded to the next three levels, but he also cultivated the Immortal Energy Palm. It was even better than the Ascension of the Nine Dragons.

Yvette was also delighted; she had also completed her cultivation. "The Immortan Energy Palm is so powerful; it was worthy of all the time we spent on it."

Darryl nodded.

She was right. They had been there for more than

twenty days, but it was worth the effort.

"Master Zhao Yun, I am forever grateful to you. I will never use this power to create trouble for our society." Darryl bowed to the crystal coffin; he was determined.

Yvette did the same; she took a bow and said, "Thank you, Master."

Even though she was a princess, she would still bow to her Master; she had taken his elixir and cultivated the Immortal Energy Palm.

"Good, let's go," Darryl said to Yvette, and they immediately left.

Darryl also destroyed the Immortal Energy Palm scripture on the stele before they left. It was a powerful scripture; it should not be seen by those who had bad intentions. It was better if it were destroyed.

Once they reached the cave entrance, they saw Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard had waited for them there.

Royal Rat Guard was delighted to see Yvette; he quickly went forward and greeted her.

Darryl was amazed by Yvette's Royal Guards. It was loyal of them to wait for her.

Ring! Ring!

Chapter 628

At that moment, Darryl's cell phone rang.

He furrowed his brows. There was no signal in the cave. Just as he stepped out, his cell phone immediately rang. He retrieved his cell phone and saw that it was Zoran.

Why would his Godfather call him?

Darryl immediately answered the call.

Zoran sounded happy when the call connected. "Darryl, why didn't you answer my call? I have been calling you multiple times."

"Godfather, I had been busy for the past few days." Darryl smiled.

Zoran nodded to himself. "Listen, it's Sara's 18th birthday tomorrow, and you must come. You—"

What had happened?

Darryl looked at his cellphone; the battery had died. He had been in the cave for many days. Even though he had not used his cellphone, the battery was dead. The cell phone shut down before they finished the call.

Zoran had invited him to Sara's birthday party the

next day.

Darryl liked Sara; she was an adorable and lovely girl.

Darryl whistled. Soon, a white shadow flew across in the sky at high speed. It was the snow eagle.

The snow eagle had waited nearby when Darryl was in the cave. It had never left, and it was delighted to hear Darryl's whistle. It flew quickly to Darryl and accidentally knocked into him lightly.

Darryl touched his feathers and then leapt onto his back. Then they flew to the Carter Mansion.

Yvette stomped her feet.

"Hey, you're taking the snow eagle, but what about me? How do I get back to Donghai City?" Yvette asked.

Darryl shrugged. "You can do whatever you like; you have feet, don't you?"

"You—" Yvette bit her lips. "Why can't you invite me to ride the snow eagle? It can carry a few people."
"

"Sorry, Princess Yvette." Darryl smiled. "I am heading to the Carter Mansion in Mid City. You will need to find your own way home."

Darryl petted the snow eagle's neck. The giant bird

chirped and spread its wings before it flew away.

"Darryl, wait for me!" Yvette trembled in anger; she clenched her fists. She felt embarrassed when she remembered what had happened in the cave; she had massaged his leg and greeted him as her father. Her face was scarlet red as she thought about what had happened.

...

Darryl was on the snow eagle, and they were high in the sky.

He was not sure why, but Darryl felt as if something was missing. It felt like it was something important, but he could not recall what it was.

He had forgotten that he was to rescue the Cult Mistress. When he left the cave, he was interrupted by Zoran's call, and then he forgot about that.

Chapter 629

At the Carter Mansion in Mid City.

It was six at night, and the day had not gotten dark yet. The entire Carter Mansion was lit up with colorful lights. The garden, corridor and everywhere else were filled with lights.

It was Sara's birthday party the next day. Everyone in the Carter family decorated the mansion happily.

A big, white eagle flew across the sky.

"Wow, what a big eagle!"

"It's so beautiful. Wait, there is someone on the eagle!"

"Is that Master?"

"Master is back."

The entire Carter family was amazed to see Darryl on the snow eagle.

The giant eagle dove down and landed in the garden.

Everyone gathered to look at the snow eagle.

Everyone was curious, but none of them stepped closer to the bird.

The snow eagle was excited to see everyone; it

flapped its wings continuously.

"That's good. Go on and play." Darryl smiled as he spoke to the snow eagle.

The snow eagle spread its wings and flew off; it disappeared into the sky.

Everyone was amazed; what an incredible creature!

Darryl walked through the crowd and into the hall. Then he realized he did not bring a present with him.

Sara was the nicest person in the Carter family. How could he not have prepared a big present for her 18th birthday?

He immediately took his cell phone and dialed Zephyr's number and asked him to get a gift for the birthday girl.

After that, Darryl entered the hall. Two beautiful ladies also entered the hall at the same time.

They were Sara and Rachel, and they were beautiful in their own way.

Sara was in a short white dress, and it showed off her body perfectly. She looked lovely.

Rachel was in a pair of tight black pants, and she looked sexy.

"Brother Darryl!"

Sara was surprised and excited to see Darryl. She ran toward him and hugged the man tightly.

Darryl enjoyed the moment. Sara had grown into a perfect lady.

Darryl smiled. "Sara, did you miss me?"

Sara nodded. "Yes, every single day!"

Chapter 630

Darryl touched her head; his little sister was too adorable!

Rachel furrowed her brows and said, "Sara, get down at once!"

How could she hug that useless man? How could he hug her in such a manner? That was too impolite!

"I don't care; I am happy." Sara smiled. "Brother Darryl, what are you giving me for my birthday tomorrow?"

Darryl smiled. "Don't worry, Little Girl. I've prepared a big present for you. Someone will send it here tomorrow. It's a surprise!"

"Really?" Sara was so happy; she kissed Darryl on his cheek. "Brother Darryl, you are the best!"

Darryl smiled awkwardly.

"Sara!" Rachel was annoyed. Sara would turn eighteen the next day; she was an adult. How could she kiss someone like that, especially Darryl?

Darryl ignored Rachel and smiled. "Tell me, Sara. What are your wishes? Let me fulfil your birthday wish."

Sara was too cute; Darryl treated her like his biological sister.

Sara said excitedly, "I have two wishes! The first one was for you to attend my birthday party. This is fulfilled now. My other wish is to meet the Elysium Gate Sect Master, Indomitable Darby."

"Brother Darryl, could you invite him to my party?"

Darryl was delighted. It seemed like Zephyr had managed the Elysium Gate well; Sara really admired the sect.

Darryl felt complicated. It was easy to fulfil her wish to meet Indomitable Darby, but he could not be there as two persons at the same place, and at the same time.

Darryl gave it a thought and said, "He is always away, so I will not be able to invite him. Why don't I invite his other members—Henry Bi-General, The Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters?"

Sara was so excited when she heard that. "Really?"

She jumped up and down. Even though Indomitable Darby could not be there, Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters were great too. All her friends would envy her.

Darryl nodded. "Since when have I ever lied to you?"

I shall invite them to your birthday party tomorrow.
"

Rachel laughed and said, "What a liar! Do you think they'd be so free to attend the party?"

Would the great heroes have the time to attend a young girl's birthday party? It sounded ridiculous!

Rachel stared at Darryl and said, "Don't lie to Sara. It's her birthday tomorrow. Don't just give her an empty promise. That's a terrible thing to do!"

Darryl had arrived empty-handed and lied to Sara that the present would only be there the next day.

It was ridiculous to think that he could invite heroes from the Elysium Gate to the party.

Rachel despised Darryl.

'Sh*t! What is wrong with Rachel? Why is she interrupting my conversation with Sara?' Darryl thought. He was annoyed with her.

He looked at Rachel and smiled coldly. "Who told you that they would not come? The people from the Elysium Gate will accept my invitation."

Chapter 631

"Why would they listen to you?" Rachel laughed. "Who do you think you are? Why would the Elysium Gate listen to you? You are only a live-in son-in-law."

Rachel laughed louder. "As far as I know, you are not even a live-in son-in-law now. I heard that the Lyndon family had banished you. No one would give a damn about you, especially the Elysium Gate. What a liar!"

Darryl was furious, but he smiled and said, "I refuse to speak to you."

He turned and walked away.

Rachel held Sara's hand and said again, "Sara, stay away from this useless man."

...

In a cinema on Red Flag Street, in Donghai City.

Lily and Wade sat on the last row at the VIP theatre. Wade was Samanthat's candidate for Lily's boyfriend.

Lily had a tub of popcorn as they watched the romance movie on the screen.

It was a sad story. Lily cried when the lead male character broke up with the female character.

'Lilybud, you can cry on my shoulder,' Wade said gently.

Lily smiled. "Thank you, but I am fine."

Wade took a deep breath as he found the courage to hold on to Lily's hand as he smiled. "Lilybud, this movie is so touching. Shall we go for coffee after this? We can go hiking tomorrow since I am free. Let's go for a relaxing hike."

Wade looked at Lily enthusiastically.

Since they started to date about over a week ago, he had not had the chance to hold Lily's hand. He itched to hold her hands.

Lily panicked when Wade held her hand. She replied, "I don't wish to go anywhere tomorrow. Maybe next time."

Wade was surprised. "Why?"

Lily bit her lips and said, "I am not ready."

"What do you need to prepare for hiking? You just need a set of sports attire," Wade said with a smile. "Come with me, please, Lilybud?"

Lily could not reject him, so she agreed to go with

him.

After a few days with Wade, Lily felt that he was a nice person.

He was good looking, and he was rich; he was the perfect candidate for a boyfriend. Even though Lily was conservative, she did not pull her hand back; she let Wade keep it in his grasp.

...

The next day in the Carter Mansion in the Mid City.

It was Sir Carter's youngest daughter's birthday party. The mansion had a great festive atmosphere.

Sir Carter had always favored his youngest daughter, so many people came to celebrate her 18th birthday.

Many types of luxurious cars were parked at the lot near the garden.

Representatives from many famous families and various sects were there to attend Sara's birthday party.

Even though everyone was there to attend the birthday party, they were also there because of Zoran.

The Carter family was a famous cultivator family. The whole family were cultivators, especially Zoran.

He was well respected by everyone, including the sect masters from the Six Sects. Furthermore, Zoran's wife, Susan, was also renowned for her knowledge about formation. She had an advanced understanding of them.

That was why all the sects respected the Carter family and why they were there to celebrate Sara's birthday.

Chapter 632

The guests crowded the garden.

All the senior leaders sat at the VIP tables; Master Leonard, Master Reed and Abbess Mother Serendipity were there. Besides that, the Beggars' Sect Master and Island of Peach Blossom Sect Master were there too.

Sara's birthday was a significant event in the cultivation world.

There was another table in front, and it was filled with presents from everyone. The gifts came in all sorts and sizes, and it included a one-meter-tall jade buddha sculpture and a pure gold sword.

The guests were from all walks of life; they were unsure what Sara would love to receive. So, most of them picked the most expensive gift.

They thought they should spare no expense for a daughter from the Carter family.

Zoran and Lily walked into the hall with their two daughters.

Zoran wore a long robe; he looked formal and kind.

Susan wore a long red dress; she looked as sexy as

she usually did. The dress' high cut at her thigh displayed her beautiful long legs. That sight attracted everyone.

Wow!

Everyone was amazed at Susan's beauty.

The guests also paid attention to the sisters, Rachel and Sara.

Both of them had inherited their mother's good looks and perfect body. They looked far too beautiful for their age.

"Wow, Sir Carter is so lucky! He has an attractive wife and two beautiful daughters."

"Yes, anyone would be so lucky to be the Carter family son-in-law."

"It is my dream to marry one of the two sisters."

All the men chatted softly.

Zoran smiled and greeted everyone. "Thank you for sparing your time to attend my daughter's birthday party. I am forever grateful. Please enjoy yourselves."
"

Susan stood beside him; she looked so elegant as she smiled and nodded at everyone.

The guests nodded back at her.

"Sir Carter, we will definitely enjoy ourselves."

"Yes, we can drink to our heart's content."

Zoran nodded and turned to his daughter. "Sara, the guests are here for your birthday, so please say a few words."

Sara smiled. "Thank you for coming to my birthday party. I am so happy you are here. Please enjoy yourselves and drink as much as you can."

Everyone laughed. Sir Carter's daughter was too adorable.

Sara looked around and pulled Rachel aside. "Sister, why is Brother Darryl not here? Is he not awake yet?"

Not only was Darryl not there, but none of the members from the Elysium Gate had arrived too.

Sara looked disappointed.

Chapter 633

When they saw the disappointment on Sara's face, Zoran and Lily looked at each other and sighed.

Zoran did all he could to invite members from the Elysium Gate, but he did not manage to get them to the party.

The Elysium Gate Sect had always been mysterious; no one really knew them.

"Sara!"

Suddenly a voice called out. Someone walked happily toward the family.

It was Darryl!

Darryl was dressed formally in traditional attire.

He looked smart and handsome after he dressed up.

"Brother Darryl!"

Sara rushed forward excitedly. "Brother Darryl, you look so smart today."

Darryl laughed. "Well, it is my sister's birthday; of course, I have to look smart."

Before Sara could reply, Rachel said sarcastically, "

Not bad for an animal."

Darryl's good mood immediately vanished. He went to sit at the VIP table.

Darryl was Zoran's godson, so, of course, he could sit at that table.

Once he sat down, Darryl could feel as if someone had set their eyes on him.

It was Abbess Mother Serendipity; she stared at Darryl coldly. It was the same with the sect masters from the Six Sects; all of them looked at him coldly.

Darryl was not worried at all.

He was already a Level Four Martial Marquis. His exceptional skills included the Ascension of the Nine Dragons, the Grand Destruction Art, and the Immortal Energy Palm. 2

Darryl raised his glass and took a sip of the delicious drink. He had nothing to worry about with his capability, even if he were to meet a Martial Saint. Besides, who would dare to challenge him at Carter's Mansion?

Darryl smiled as he looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Abbess Mother Serendipity slammed her hand on the table and pointed at Darryl. "Darryl, you

bastard! How dare you come here?"

Darryl smiled. "This is my godfather's residence, why couldn't I be here?"

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her brows.

Everyone in their community had heard the news about how Zoran had taken Darryl in as his godson. Hence, it was logical for Darryl to be there.

'How could this bastard sit at the same table as me?' Abbess Mother thought.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious; she was about to draw her sword.

Zoran felt as if something was not right. He smiled and said, "Everyone, today is my daughter's birthday. Let's put down all of our differences and have a good time."

Abbess Mother Serendipity had no choice but to sit down. However, she still stared at Darryl furiously.

"The President of Mid City's La Fortuna, with a gift from the Qing Dynasty."

One of the servants announced as more guests arrived.

"The Red Blade Sect Master, with a Green Level Weapon gift—a blue water sword."

"The President of Stary Entertainment Company,

with a gift of a crystal diamond ring."

After about an hour, almost all the guests had arrived. Zoran smiled and announced, "Great! Let's enjoy ourselves tonight. Let the feast begin!"

Chapter 634

Rovan clapped his hands, and a few hundred waitresses walked out with plates of delicious food.

The dishes were served; all of them were Mid City's luxurious food choices.

All the guests were amazed by the selection.

The Carter family was very generous; each dish would have easily cost them ten thousand bucks!

Just as everyone started to enjoy their delicious food and drinks, a servant announced from the entrance.

"Elysium Gate Sect Master!"

What?!

Elysium Gate Sect Master?!

Everyone was in shock as they turned to look at the entrance.

How capable was the Carter family that they could invite the Elysium Gate Sect Master to a birthday party at their home!

The Elysium Gate Sect Master, Indomitable Darby, had always maintained his mysterious identity. No

one had ever met him in person. Everyone waited to see who he was.

Darryl was stunned. What had happened?
Indomitable Darby? Who was the imposter?

The Six Sects were furious; Indomitable Darby had used the Weak Poison to capture all of them and humiliated them at the Wishing Star Tower. They would never forget about that.

Everyone held their fists tightly as they waited for Indomitable Darby, especially Master Leonard and Abbess Mother Serendipity. Both of them were forced to go through a wedding ceremony at the Wishing Star Tower.

Zoran and Lily looked at each other; they were quite surprised. ①

Zoran took a deep breath. He tried his best to invite Indomitable Darby to the party, but he had failed. Why would he be there? However, it was a happy surprise. "Hurry! Please invite him in."

Sara, who sat beside him, almost jumped up excitedly. "Indomitable Darby is here? This is great!"

When Susan told her that they did not manage to invite her hero from the Elysium Gate, she had been so disappointed about it. She thought she had failed

to get her birthday wish.

She did not expect God would give her a surprise; Indomitable Darby had arrived at her party!

'Indomitable Darby' walked toward the party slowly.

He was dressed how the real Indomitable Darby would usually dress. A black robe that would not show his figure and a golden mask to hide his face.

'Indomitable Darby' walked slowly with his hands behind his back; he looked sombre.

Everyone's attention was on him.

Darryl laughed discreetly. He must have been very famous that someone would try to impersonate him. First Yvette, and then someone else had done it again.

Well, the imposter had done an excellent job.

"Indomitable Darby." Everyone stared at the fake 'Indomitable Darby'.

Master Leonard shouted, "Indomitable Darby, how dare you show your face here! You have captured and humiliated everyone at the Wishing Star Tower. We want revenge!"

Master Leonard took a deep breath. "Since it is Sara's birthday today, I will not cause a scene. We will settle this after the party is over."

Master Leonard turned to look at Abbess Mother Serendipity.

She focused her sharp eyes at the fake 'Indomitable Darby'.

Yvette had impersonated Indomitable Darby at the Wishing Star Tower, and she had forced Abbess Mother Serendipity to go through a wedding ceremony; she even kissed her on her cheek!

She was furious when she thought about the kiss. She wanted to teach him a lesson until he would kneel and beg for her forgiveness!

Chapter 635

"Bastard!" Abbess Mother Serendipity almost shouted.

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' laughed. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, the kiss and the humiliation that you and the other sects had suffered at the Wishing Star Tower were all a misunderstanding. I didn't expect that Master Leonard and Abbess Mother Serendipity would still keep a grudge about it."

Abbess Mother Serendipity felt a shiver down her spine. "Bullsh*t! I will kill you after the party ends!"

Then she went back to her seat; she was still furious.

Darryl stared at the imposter; he was curious about him. The young man really did look like the real Indomitable Darby. Why would he want to impersonate Darryl's other personality? What would he gain from that?

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' apologized to Zoran. "Sir Carter, I heard that you wanted to invite me to a party, so here I am."

"Sect Master Darby!" Zoran laughed. "Sect Master Darby, my daughter, Sara, is a big fan of yours. It is

incredible that you are here!"

"Yes," Susan added, "I am also your fan."

Susan had heard that Elysium Gate's Indomitable Darby was also a master of formations. It would be great if he could teach her a few new formations.

"My hero!" Sara ran toward him happily; she wanted to hug him.

Darryl stood up from his seat and stopped Sara.

He looked at the imposter and smiled. "Excuse me, are you really the Elysium Gate Sect Master? Are you sure you are not an imposter?"

Wow!

Everyone looked at Darryl when he said that!

Why would he say something like that?

"Darryl!" Susan walked toward him and said worriedly, "Nonsense! Do you mean he is a fake?"

Darryl smiled coldly. "Aunt Susan, Indomitable Darby and I have a great relationship; he is a close friend of mine. This is not him."

Everyone started to laugh.

Did Darryl say that he and Indomitable Darby were close friends? How could that be?

"Aunt Susan, please throw this imposter out."

Darryl sighed.

Susan bit her lips and scolded Darryl, "Darry, don't be rude."

'Darry is great in all aspects. However, he's too arrogant and loves to brag. How would he know Indomitable Darryl? They are best friends? It sounds surreal,' Susan thought.

Rachel looked at Darryl. "You can tell all your lies privately, but there are too many people here."

Then Rachel took a glass of wine and splashed it onto Darryl's face. "How pathetic! Yesterday night, you said you could invite Henry Bi-Generals, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters. Where are they now? Perhaps you could not lie any further now that their Sect Master is here?"

Darryl was furious. Was there something wrong with Rachel?

Darryl was about to explode, but the fake 'Indomitable Darby' walked toward them and said, "Whether I am the real Indomitable Darby or not, it is not up to you to decide. Who you think you are?"

Sh*t!

'He's an imposter and yet he thinks that he can be arrogant about it?' Darryl thought.

Darryl was about to speak when Zoran replied, "

Darryl, go back to your seat, please; don't cause a scene."

Darryl decided not to say anything and went back to his seat. He waited to see what the fake 'Indomitable Darby' wanted.

The imposter smiled at Zoran. "Sir Carter, I came in a hurry and so I did not bring a valuable gift with me. Here are a few barrels of apricot blossom wine for you; I hope you will accept them."

Then he clapped his hands.

A few men-in-black walked into the hall; each of them carried a barrel of wine.

There was some mud at the bottom of the barrels, and the red label looked faded. It was apparent that they were kept for more than a few hundred years. Everyone knew that the longer the wine was stored, the better the quality, especially apricot blossom wine.

Zoran smiled. "Thank you, Sect Master Darryl. It is our honor to have you here today. How could I accept these wines from you?" ①

As they spoke, the waitressed served all the guests a glass of said wine.

Zoran invited the fake 'Indomitable Darby' to sit at the VIP table.

Then he raised his glass and shouted, "Everyone, thank you for attending my daughter's birthday dinner. Cheers!"

Everyone raised their glasses and started to drink.

Everyone also took the opportunity to build more connections during dinner.

After a few rounds, the fake 'Indomitable Darby' stood up and raised his glass to Zoran. "Cheers, Sir Carter!" Then he emptied the glass.

Zoran laughed and emptied his glass too.

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' looked around and shouted, "On this special occasion, I have a request for Sir Carter, and I hope that you would accept it."

Chapter 636

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' cleared his throat and said, "Sir Carter, I have a simple request for you. I have a friend named Ewan White. He was a childhood friend of your elder daughter, Rachel. On his behalf, I would like to ask for your daughter's hand in marriage."

Susan was shocked. How did Ewan know Indomitable Darby?

Darryl furrowed his brows; he was furious with Ewan.

When Rachel tried to trick him at the peach blossom forest, Ewan appeared out of nowhere and pushed Darryl into the woods. It was fortunate that Darryl found the Bai Qi Formations. Otherwise, he would be trapped to die in the forest.

The imposter wanted to arrange for marriage for Ewan.

Darryl looked around, but he could not find Ewan. Was he the imposter?

Ophelia was at Sara's birthday party. Ewan was her beloved follower, so he would definitely be nearby too. Ophelia was there with a few of her followers,

but Ewan was nowhere to be seen.

Susan said, "Well, since Sect Master Darby had personally requested for this marriage, let's agree to it, Zoran."

It was a complicated decision for Zoran. He thought that his godson, Darryl, was the perfect candidate for his elder daughter, Rachel.

However, how could he refuse Indomitable Darby's request?

Zoran was about to agree to the request when he heard a long sigh.

Darryl shook his head; there was a complicated expression on his face. "Godfather, how many times do I need to tell you that this Indomitable Darby is an imposter. Don't fall into his trap."

Darryl knew that the imposter was Ewan. He pretended to be the Elysium Gate Sect Master so that he could ask to marry Rachel.

"Darryl, stop fooling around!" Susan said.

Darryl could not stand it anymore; he stood up and said, "Aunt Susan, I am not lying. I am very close to Indomitable Darby. I can swear that this is an imposter. Trust me."

Everyone laughed after they heard Darryl's words.

Rachel laughed too. "Darryl, who do you think you are to know Indomitable Darby?"

The imposter shook his head. "Sir Carter, your godson is very annoying. Didn't you teach him manners?"

"Sir Carter, the Elysium Gate members are here!"

A servant announced.

Everyone could hear the footsteps clearly.

The guests looked at the door; no one made a sound.

A giant flag made its appearance, followed by almost a thousand people. All of them were in traditional black costumes; they looked smart and impressive!

Henry Bi-General led the troop, followed by the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters.

What?!

Everyone was stunned. All the heroes from the Elysium Gate were there.

Then, everyone turned to look at the fake 'Indomitable Darby'.

The Elysium Gate Sect Master had brought all of his followers to attend the party! How grand!

The imposter started to tremble; he did not expect

the Elysium Gate Sect to be there. His secret would be revealed!

Sara danced up and down when she saw all of them. "They look so impressive!"

Then she turned to look at the fake Indomitable Darby; she was fascinated by him.

Just like the rest of the guests, she still thought that he was the real Indomitable Darby.

Finally, Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters stood in front of the fake Indomitable Darby.

The entire party fell silent; it was as if they waited for the newcomers to greet the Indomitable Darby.

However, Zephyr shouted, "Who are you? How dare you impersonate Elysium Gate Sect Master!"

Slap!

Zephyr lashed out at the fake 'Indomitable Darby'.

His golden mask flew off and dropped onto the floor, and he was flung more than ten feet away. He landed in the middle of the hall.

What?! The Indomitable Darby was a fake?!

The Carter family were shocked to see who was beneath that mask.

Ewan White?

"Ewan, how could you—" Zoran was furious. "How dare you!"

Not only did he pretend to be Indomitable Darby, but he had also asked to marry his daughter in front of everyone.

Chapter 637

Ewan paled as he panicked.

Rachel was worried.

Both of them had come up with the plan to impersonate the Elysium Gate Sect Master.

When the Carter family did not manage to get any response from Indomitable Darby despite their multiple invitations, Rachel knew that the hero would never make it to the party. That was when she had the idea to get Ewan to pretend to be the Elysium Gate Sect Master.

Not only could she fulfil her little sister's wish, but they could also use the opportunity to ask for their father's consent for their marriage. It's a win for everyone.

Rachel did not expect the Elysium Gate's members would make an appearance.

At that moment, the thousands of followers went to Darryl and bowed to him. "Brother Darryl."

Their voices were as loud as thunder.

When Darryl sent a message to Zephyr with a request for him to prepare a birthday present, he

had ordered him not to reveal his identity at the party. That was why they addressed him as Brother Darryl.

Everyone was stunned when they heard that.

Did the Elysium Gate heroes address him as ' Brother Darryl'?

Everyone was astonished.

Especially Susan, Rachel and Sara were in shock.

Darryl nodded hastily as he said to Zephyr, "Great, you are all here. It is my godsister's birthday today. Please enjoy yourselves."

Darryl glared at Ewan.

"And take care of this imposter," Darryl said coldly.

"Yes, Brother Darryl," Zephyr replied obediently. He stared at Ewan as he headed toward him. He kicked at the imposter's face.

Zephyr kicked him hard. Ewan shouted as his face bled profusely.

"How dare you pretend to be the Elysium Gate Sect Master?" Zephyr said coldly.

The Elysium Gates' members pulled out their swords as well!

Everyone was stunned.

Ewan almost lost his mind as his wounds continued to bleed. He quickly knelt in front of Zephyr and begged him. "Brother Dixon, I didn't mean to do it! Please forgive me! Please forgive me—"

Bang! Zephyr kicked him again before he could finish.

Ewan screamed; his nose was broken.

Zephyr did not stop there; he gave Ewan a few more kicks to his face.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Each kick got heavier and stronger.

Everyone was scared about what had happened.

Ewan's face was also swollen.

Finally, Zephyr stopped. He put his long blade against Ewan's neck and said coldly, "No one can challenge the dignity of the Elysium Gate. You have insulted our Sect Master; how should I forgive you?"

"No one can challenge the dignity of the Elysium gate!"

"Kill him!"

Ewan was terrified; he continued to bow and said, "Heroes of Elysium Gate, please forgive me! I will

never dare to do it again."

"Never dare to do this again? It's too late for that!" Zephyr said coldly as he raised his long blade; he was ready to strike against Ewan.

"Hero Dixon!" Rachel shouted when she saw the Zephyr raised his long blade; she rushed toward them and begged. "Hero Dixon, please forgive him, he will not do it again."

What would she do if Ewan was killed?

Zephyr furrowed his brows. "Miss Carter, this is the Elysium Gate's matter, you should not interfere."

Zephyr sounded determined!

Rachel shivered, and her face was pale. After some hesitation, she walked toward Darryl.

She bit her lips and said, "Darryl, please help me to persuade him. Ewan does not deserve to die."

Rachel could see that the Elysium Gate respected Darryl. Perhaps they would spare Ewan's life if Darryl could say a few words.

She was unwilling to ask for Darryl's help, but she had no choice! She could not just leave Ewan to his death!

Chapter 638

Darryl looked at Rachel as he took a sip of this drink. "Why should I help him?"

'Ewan was the one who threw me into the peach blossom forest. Now he is lying to everyone as he pretended to be me. Why should I help him? Besides, you have always looked down on me, and now you want my help?' Darryl thought.

Rachel was worried; she bit her lips until it bled. She grabbed Darryl's arm and begged. "I begged you, please. I will call you brother if you wish. Brother Darryl, please tell them to let Ewan go. Please help him. I am begging you..."

Darryl smiled coldly, but he did not say anything. It was too late to call him a brother now.

"It's out of my hands," Darryl said impatiently as he put down his glass.

Rachel's knees almost buckled; her face was full of regret. She should not have asked Ewan to pretend to be Indomitable Darby, but it was too late.

"Darryl."

A lady stood up and called for Darryl; it was Ophelia

Lane.

Ophelia looked really sexy. She wore a wine-red pencil skirt that showed her bodyline, a pair of stilettos and she also let her long curly hair down—all those made her even sexier.

Ophelia bit her lips. Ewan was one of her talented followers; she could not let the Elysium Gate execute him.

"Darryl, are you able to save Ewan?" Ophelia said lightly, "No matter what, I am your master, and Ewan is also my disciple."

Darryl looked at Ophelia and sighed.

When Abbess Mother Serendipity had badly injured Darryl, Ophelia had used the Yang Herb to save him, and so Darryl had agreed to be her follower.

"Master, I don't wish to save him," Darryl said with a shrug.

Ophelia was worried; she walked toward Darryl and whispered, "I am asking for a favor; please save Ewan. I will owe you for this favor."

Darryl could smell the scent of her body as she spoke; he shivered.

Since Ophelia had asked for a favor, Darryl nodded his agreement. "Fine."

Ophelia had given him the Nine Day Yin Yang herb to heal his severe injuries. He had to do it to repay her.

Darryl stood and waved at Zephyr. "Alright, please do me a favor and release Ewan."

"Sure, Brother Darryl." Zephyr nodded, but he kicked at Ewan's face again. "Get lost!"

"Yes..."

The last kick broke a few of Ewan's teeth, and he dropped onto the floor.

Zephyr looked at Ewan coldly. "I am letting you go because Brother Darryl asked me to do that. If you dare to impersonate anyone from the Elysium Gate again, I would definitely kill you then."

"Thank you, Hero, for not killing me! Thank you, thank you!" Ewan mumbled as he gathered his energy to stand up and ran away.

Zephyr laughed as he watched Ewan disappear. Then he stepped toward Zoran. "Sir Carter, Brother Darryl had invited the Elysium Gate to your daughter's party."

Zephyr looked at Darryl.

Sara was so excited that she ran toward Darryl and hugged him. "Thank you, Brother Darryl!"

'Brother Darryl had promised me that he would invite the heroes of the Elysium Gate to my party, and he had done it!' Sara thought.

"That's alright." Darryl patted Sara on her head. Even though she had just reached adulthood, her body was no lesser than an adult.

Zoran laughed excitedly. "It is our honor to have you here."

Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters were all famous heroes from the Elysium Gate.

Their attendance certainly made the Carter family proud!

Chapter 639

Zephyr smiled and continued to say, "We are here for a birthday party, so we did not come empty-handed. We brought a present for Miss Carter."

Nimbus walked forward with a unique gift box.

Wow!

Everyone wondered what was in the gift box.

Then Nimbus opened the box and took out something gold and shiny.

It was a golden mask!

The golden mask was Indomitable Darby's symbol.

The mask was carefully crafted, with a few dragons engraved on it. The dragons looked as if they were floating.

The one that Ewan wore was only a toy.

"How beautiful..."

Sara was very excited when she received the mask; she was struck dumb.

Nimbus laughed. "Miss Sara, our Sect Master ordered it especially for you. It is the same as the

one he has. He said that you are beautiful and kind, and so, you deserve to have the same mask too."

Nimbus looked around before he said, "The golden mask is the symbol of the Elysium Gate Sect Master's identity. If you are ever in danger, you can bring it to the Elysium Gate, and any of our members will be at your service! The mask is akin to our Sect Master."

What?!

She could use the mask to control the members?

The Elysium Gate had grown drastically; they already had tens of thousands of members.

That gift was very precious!

Everyone was amazed, and they looked at Sara with envy.

Sara was so excited that her voice shook. "Is this true?"

She held the mask; her head spun so quickly that she almost fainted.

Zoran and Susan looked at each other; they were still in shock.

They had never met Indomitable Darby, so they did not expect he would be so kind to their daughter. The mask could control the Elysium Gate members!

Zoran trembled. "I do not know how to repay Sect Master Darby's generosity. Please take a seat."

Zephyr smiled. "That's alright, Sir Carter. We will just take a drink, and then we will have to leave."

Zephyr emptied the glass in front of him and left with the rest of the members.

Zoran knew that the Elysium Gate was busy and so he did not ask them to stay. He bid farewell to all of them, and the party resumed.

All the other guests enjoyed themselves as they drank and made new friends. The party lasted until late in the evening.

Many of the guests were drunk, and some even sat under the table.

Zoran invited his guests to stay overnight as the day was late. They had a huge mansion, and there were plenty of rooms for everyone.

Everyone agreed, and the servants helped the guests to their room.

Darryl was speechless when he realized that the Emei Sect's guest room was next to his!

Darryl would not have dared to sleep in that room as he would be terrified that Abbess Mother Serendipity would kill him. However, he was no

longer worried about that.

Chapter 640

When the party ended, the day was already dark, and the moon shone brightly in the sky.

Everyone was already in their room to rest for the night. As Darryl walked toward his room, he heard someone calling for him from behind when he walked past the garden, followed by the clucking sound of stilettos.

He turned around and saw Susan.

Susan looked beautiful that night. As the party's hostess, she had taken a few drinks too, and her face was rosy.

"Aunt Susan, what's wrong?" Darryl asked as he turned around to face her.

Susan bit her lips and said softly, "Darry, I need a favor from you. Can you arrange for me to meet Indomitable Darby?"

Sara was not the only person impressed by Indomitable Darby; Susan was also mesmerized. She wanted to get to know Indomitable Darby.

Darryl almost laughed. How many fans did he have? Was Susan a fan?

It appeared that Zephyr had managed the Elysium Gate well.

Darryl was delighted to hear that; he smiled and said, "Sure. I'll call him and ask him to meet you."

"That's great." Susan smiled. "Thank you for your help, Darryl." Then she turned around and left.

Darryl laughed.

Since she worshipped Indomitable Darby, he would give her a surprise.

...

After he had stared at the moon for about two hours, Darryl wore the golden mask, put on his black robe, and headed toward Susan's room.

Zoran was still with some old friends in the hall, and so, he was not back in the room.

It was almost midnight.

The light in Susan's room was still on.

Susan stood in front of a sand plate; she used some small wooden logs to solve a formation. The formation was too complicated; it had been more than a month, and she had yet to solve it.

A thin layer of sweat covered her face; she looked elegant under the lights.

There was a knock on her door.

It was already late at night, so who could it be?

Susan furrowed her brows and went to open the door. She was stunned when she saw who was there.

A man in a black robe and golden mask stood at the door.

"Sect Master Darby?" Susan got excited.

She could see the dragon engravings on the mask, and they looked so real; it was the real golden mask! It was the Elysium Gate Sect Master, Indomitable Darby.

Darryl, who was at the door, could see the surprise on Susan's face. He smiled and said, "A friend of mine, Darryl, called me and said that you would like to meet me. Here I am."

Darryl looked at Susan and controlled his voice., "I hope you don't mind that I came without an invitation."

"No, it's perfectly fine." Susan finally gathered her thoughts. She was so excited.

'I am not dreaming, right?' Susan thought.

Darryl saw the formation on the sand plate and asked, "The snow lily formation?"

Susan really liked to study formations.

Susan nodded happily. "You know about this formation?"

She had heard that Indomitable Darby was an expert in formations. He had also defeated the Ten Villains with formations. However, she did not expect his knowledge was so great that he could identify the snow lily formation with only one quick look.

"I have some knowledge about it," Darryl said as he walked toward the sand plate. "The snow lily formation was created by an ancient warrior, Zhuge Liang. It is a unique formation, and it has 49 types of changes."

Susan was delighted. "Do you know this formation? Could you teach me, please?" Susan asked, hopefully.

She had only seen the formation in some ancient manuals. She tried to solve it, but it had been a month, and she had not been able to do it.

Darryl smiled as he picked up a small wooden log. Then he started to demonstrate. "The key to this formation is the south-east corner. Look, you will need to do this..."

Darryl shared his knowledge about snow lily

formation, as well as demonstrated the way to solve it.

In just a short while, Susan had understood the essence of the formation. She was impressed. "Sect Master Darby, I—"

Chapter 641

Susan wanted to say that she admired him.

However, she was the hostess, so she had to be calm and compose. She bit her lips and said softly, "Sect Master Darby, you are so knowledgeable in formations. Could you take me as your disciple?"

Susan had always been interested in formations, and she had always admired Indomitable Darby. Since he could share his knowledge about the snow lily formation so effortlessly, she wanted to be his student.

Indomitable Darby was the Elysium Gate's Sect Master. There was nothing wrong for her to be his student.

What?!

'Aunt Susan wanted to be my student?' Darryl thought.

Darryl did not know how to respond to that. "You must be joking, Mistress. You are smart and intelligent; I am not qualified to be your teacher."

What a joke! If he were to accept Susan as his student, it would complicate their relationship.

"You are too modest! I sincerely want to be your student. I hope that you could accept me."

Susan knelt and bowed to Darryl; she could not afford to lose the opportunity.

"Mistress Carter," Darryl immediately tried to help her up.

Susan bit her lips and held onto Darryl's legs. "Sect Master Darby, please accept me as a student! Please!"

Susan begged him, and Darryl could not stand it anymore.

Darryl had no choice but to nod his head. "That's fine."

Susan was delighted to hear that. She quickly bowed to Darryl. "Please accept a bow from your disciple, Master."

"That's good. Please stand up." Darryl quickly helped her up and said, "It is really late now, I should get going. I will teach you formations when we meet again. I have to go now."

Darryl opened the door and left.

"Let me walk you out, Master," Susan said with a smile.

"That's not necessary," Darryl said before he

immediately left.

Susan was too happy. Not only did she meet Indomitable Darby, but he had also accepted her as a student.

...

Once Darryl left Susan's room, he went to the garden and removed the black robe and mask.

Darryl never imagined that Indomitable Darby's name would attract so many fans. He was delighted. Then he headed back to his room.

It was past midnight.

Darryl hummed a song as he walked toward his room and opened the door.

Darryl heard a voice as soon as he stepped into the room!

"You shall die tonight, Darryl!"

Two ladies with swords charged toward Darryl.

Why were there two women in his room? Darryl was shocked. However, he avoided their attack and turned on the light.

Once the light was on, Darryl could see them clearly.

It was Abbess Mother Serendipity and Megan!

"You useless thing! I couldn't kill you at the party,

and now that it is over, it is the time for you to die too!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly as she stared at Darryl. It was an insult to her to have to share the same table with Darryl.

That was why Abbess Mother Serendipity had gone into his room at night; it was to attack him.

"Megan, close the door," Abbess Mother Serendipity ordered.

She wanted to kill the useless guy in his room.

Megan obeyed her Master's order and went to lock the door.

Chapter 642

Darryl let out a long sigh. He held his fists tightly when Megan locked the door.

'Great, let's settle this today since both of you are here,' Darryl thought.

Abbess Mother Serendipity looked at Darryl and furrowed her brows. The sword in her hand shook.

"I shall get rid of you for the greater good, and help the Darby family to teach you a lesson!" Abbess Mother Serendipity shouted as she charged toward Darryl.

Abbess Mother Serendipity used all her force; air circulated her sword.

At the same time, Megan also punched at Darryl.

Darryl smiled coldly as he stood steadily there.

"Let's see who is teaching whom a lesson!" Darryl said coldly.

He started to gather his internal energy, and then he moved toward Megan. He lifted his hand lightly, and the wave sent Megan's sword off her hands!

Megan was too weak when compared to Darryl. Her

sword dropped onto the floor before she could even see any of his movement.

Darryl quickly raised his hand to seal her acupoint so that she would become motionless.

Once he was done with Megan, Darryl laughed and took out his Blood Drinking Sword and started to fight against Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Loud sounds were heard when Abbess Mother Serendipity's sword met Darryl's. After a few rounds of battle, Abbess Mother Serendipity felt that something was not right.

'He has been promoted to Level Four Martial Marquis?' she thought.

Even though she was a Level Five Martial Marquis, she did not feel that she had any advantage over Darryl.

Suddenly, she saw a punch that came straight at her.

Due to the high speed of the punch, Abbess Mother Serendipity had no choice but to meet it with her internal energy.

Bang!

Both fists met, and a loud noise was heard. Abbess Mother Serendipity fell a few steps backward; her face looked awful!

Darryl's internal energy was way above Abbess Mother Serendipity.

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity felt as if her chest was about to explode. She looked at Darryl; she could not believe what had happened.

How would it be possible?!

Darryl had become more powerful in just a few days!

Darryl smiled and looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "Didn't expect that, did you?"

As he spoke, he sprinted toward her and sealed Abbess Mother Serendipity's acupoint too.

Abbess Mother Serendipity's body shivered, and then she became motionless.

Megan was shocked to see what had happened; she shouted, "Master—"

Megan was so worried; he had sealed their acupoints. Darryl had become so powerful.

"You useless thing!" Megan bit her lips. "Release us!"

"Release you?"

Chapter 643

Darryl smiled, but his eyes were red. He walked toward Megan and slapped her!

Slap!

There was a big red hand mark on Megan's face.

"This is for not knowing how to tell between good and evil," Darryl said as he looked coldly at Megan.

Darryl held his fists tightly. He had treated her so well and helped her; he had even given her many Godly Pills. Even her fiancé, Kent had taken his Godly Pill!

What did he get in return? She had called him useless—a villain!

Megan shouted, "How dare you hit me? How dare you say I could not differentiate good and evil? You are useless because you have joined the Eternal Life Sect!"

Slap!

Darryl gave her another slap!

"This is for your ungratefulness! I have always been kind to you, and how do you treat me in return?"

Darryl could not control his emotions.

Slap!

Another big slap!

Megan dropped onto the ground.

Darryl shouted angrily, "This is for Adina! You know what a kind person she was! How dare you kill her!"

Darryl screamed on the top of his lungs. He could still remember how devastated Chester was when Adina was killed.

Abbess Mother Serendipity trembled when she saw what had happened. She shouted, "You're a useless piece of sh*t! Don't release your anger at Megan; come at me!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity thought that she could get rid of Darryl; she did not expect that he had upgraded his power so drastically.

It was humiliating to see Darryl hit her favorite student in front of her!

Darryl stopped and turned to look at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "Keep your mouth shut!"

Then he turned and walked toward Abbess Mother Serendipity.

"Don't you dare touch me! I will kill you." Abbess

Mother Serendipity shook when she shouted that.

Darryl took a deep breath before he looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity.

She wore a long purple dress. Even though it was a conservative piece, it still showed her body perfectly.

Darryl smiled. "You said that I am useless. What about you? A petty thief?"

As he spoke, he stared at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "It's about time for the Celestial Silkworm Armor and the Supreme Mystery Scripture to return to their real owner."

"You—" Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lips.

Darryl did not waste any more time. He reached out to feel Abbess Mother Serendipity's waist until he could take hold of the Supreme Mystery Scripture.

He knew that she had hidden something there. As expected, that was the scripture that he had lost.

"And the Celestial Silkworm Armor, I guess that it is on your body. Time to return it to me," Darryl said coldly.

Darryl reached out again toward her.

"What are you trying to do?!" Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious.

The Celestial Silkworm Armor was with her; she was wearing it. How could Darryl take it from her?

As her acupoint was sealed, she could not move at all. Darryl's hand got closer to her.

Chapter 644

"Stop!" Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious, and she was also ashamed.

She had the Celestial Silkworm Armor on her, so how could she let Darryl remove it!

It was a blatant violation of her privacy!

Darryl would touch her if he were to remove the armor; her reputation would be tarnished if that news were to spread out.

Darryl ignored her and continued to remove her long dress; he was about to remove the armor.

"I will kill you!" Abbess Mother Serendipity shouted.

Darryl was furious; he went behind her and knocked her onto her knees.

Abbess Mother Serendipity dropped to her knees on the ground.

"You don't deserve to speak to me while standing." Darryl looked at her coldly; then, he did the same to Megan.

Megan dropped to her knees on the ground too.

Darryl brought a chair and sat in front of both of them.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious; she had never knelt in front of anyone before that.

It was humiliating for her to kneel to that useless Darryl.

Darryl could see Abbess Mother Serendipity's anger. He almost died when she attacked him, so he was quite satisfied to see that!

Darryl smiled and reached out to pet Abbess Mother Serendipity head as if she was a pet.

Abbess Mother Serendipity could not take how she was treated; she shouted angrily at Darryl. "You have humiliated me today; I will kill you in the future!"

"I don't think you'll get this chance." Darryl smiled.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was still stubborn despite her sealed acupoint.

"Kill me if you dare!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly.

She knew that Darryl would not release her so easily, but she would rather die than suffer more humiliation.

Darryl smiled. "Killing you is too easy on you. You

broke my heart vein at Langley's wedding, so I think I will repay you kindly. I shall break your vein, and then remove the armor!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity's body quivered; her face was pale when she shouted, "How dare you!"

She was Emei's Sect Master; if her heart vein broke, she would not be able to cultivate anymore. What was the point of living then? She would rather die.

"Why wouldn't I?" Darryl replied. The next moment, Darryl raised his hand and punched Abbess Mother Serendipity's chest.

Her heart vein would definitely break with such a powerful punch.

At that moment, someone kicked the door open; that powerful energy broke the door into pieces. The huge shadow marched in and broke Darryl's punch.

It was the Wudang Sect's Master Leonard!

Master Leonard's room was also nearby. He had heard some noises, and so he tried to investigate it. When he heard Abbess Mother Serendipity's voice, he did not hesitate to barge into the room to stop Darryl's attack.

"Useless piece of sh*t! How dare you attack Abbess Mother Serendipity?!"

Master Leonard shouted as he attacked Darryl.

Master Leonard attacked with the Eight Trigrams Multiple Punch—Wudang Sect's special skill.

Air circulated Master Leonard, as it created a circle of eight trigrams.

Darryl did not hesitate to defend himself.

Bang!

Once their two fists touched, both Darryl and Master Leonard bounced a few steps backward.

Theoretically, Master Leonard would not be able to match Darryl's power. However, he had used all of his energy on the Eight Trigrams Multiple Punch and Darryl had only started to lift his fist. Even though both of them bounced backward, it was apparent who was the stronger person.

Chapter 645

Master Leonard quickly took the opportunity to release the two women's acupoints.

Darryl could not stop him in time.

Master Leonard had spoiled the plan.

It had not been easy for Darryl to find an opportunity to defeat Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Darryl laughed sarcastically. "Wow, I didn't know that Master Leonard and Abbess Mother Serendipity are in an intimate relationship."

Yvette had impersonated Indomitable Darby at the Wishing Star Tower and captured members from all the sects. Then she made Abbess Mother Serendipity go through a wedding ceremony with Master Leonard. Everyone had heard about that.

No one dared to mention it because of Abbess Mother Serendipity's temper.

Darryl laughed. "It seems like both of you are really close. The husband would always come running when the wife is in trouble. How loving of you!"

"Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity trembled as she turned to look at Master Leonard. "Why are you

here? I don't need your help!"

Master Leonard did not know how to react to that.

'Abbess Mother Serendipity is too ridiculous. I am here to help her; not only did she not appreciate my effort, but she is also calling me a busy body,' Master Leonard thought.

"I will get my revenge, Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity looked at Megan and said, "Let's go!"

The women left as Master Leonard trailed behind them.

Darryl held his fists; his eyes were red. He had only retrieved the Supreme Mystery Scripture; the Celestial Silkworm Armor was still with Abbess Mother Serendipity. He really did not want to let them go.

However, he had no choice but to let them leave.

Master Leonard, Abbess Mother Serendipity and Megan were not his matches.

However, to win, he would need to use his unique skills. That would put everyone on alert.

The Six Sects would definitely be on Abbess Mother Serendipity's side. He would not be able to defeat so many of them at once.

Darryl's eyes were red; he was upset to see them

leave.

He was especially furious when he remembered that Megan had killed his brother's wife at the Eternal Life Island.

Ring! Ring!

Darryl's cell phone started to ring at that moment.

Darryl sighed and decided to stop thinking about Abbess Mother Serendipity. He took out his cell phone.

It was already late at night; who would look for him at that hour?

The screen showed that it was Skyler.

Skyler was the Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Sect Master. He had passed the Sect Master title to Darryl when he produced the Heaven Cult Elixir for him.

When Darryl was made the Elder Master, he had returned the Sect Master title to Skyler.

Why would Skyler call him? They had not contacted each other for a long while.

Darryl answered the call.

Once the call connected, he heard Skyler's panicky voice. "Brother Darryl! I finally managed to get a

hold of you. Something terrible had happened at Elysian Island!"

Something terrible had happened?

Darryl was shocked to hear that.

Then Skyler said, "There was a fire at Elysian Island a few days ago. All of the houses were completely burnt. Cult Mistress must have died in the fire, and the Grandmaster of Heaven is devastated about it. He had not been managing the sect for a few days now. It is very chaotic here at the moment. You are the Elder Master, Brother Darryl. So, only you have the right to be the interim Grandmaster of Heaven to manage the sect."

The Cult Mistress had died in a fire?

Sh*t!

That was the reason for his unsettled mind.

He had forgotten about her!

Darryl touched his forehead and said, "Fine, I understand."

Then, he hung up the call.

The fire at Elysian Island was Monica's idea.

It seemed like the plan had been perfectly executed; the entire Grandmaster Heaven Cult thought that

she was dead.

He was supposed to meet the Cult Mistress, but he had missed that; he had spent his time in cultivation at the ancient tomb. Right after he left the tomb, he went straight to Sara's birthday party. He had completely forgotten about her.

Chapter 646

The Cult Mistress must have been very disappointed.

Darryl was worried; he had no idea where the Cult Mistress was at that moment.

'Once she left Elysian Island, she would definitely come to Donghai City to look for me. And I have not been back to Donghai City for a few days now. I wonder what she did when she could not find me?' Darryl thought.

Darryl was worried; he left the room immediately. He whistled to the snow eagle and rushed back to Donghai City immediately.

Darryl felt uneasy the entire journey. Images of the Cult Mistress filled his mind. She was pregnant too, so, hopefully, she was alright.

...

At the Emei Mountain.

The building was located in the mid-section of the mountain; it was an ancient building, and it was the location of the Emei Sect, one of the Six Sects.

For thousands of years, the Emei Sect had produced

many female leaders.

There was even a rumor that the only female empress in history, Lady Wu, was Emei Sect's 26th Sect Master.

Their Sect Master was the infamous Goddess, Aurora Hansen, and she was the sect's 37th Sect Master.

Due to her unique skill, the Icy Dragon Punch, she was also known as Ice Lady Goddess.

The Icy Dragon Punch was a rare skill, but it was also extremely powerful!

The legend about the Ice Lady Goddess was an incident that happened five years ago.

At that time, there was a landslide at Emei Mountain due to the consistent heavy rainfall. All of the villagers at the bottom of the mountain suffered as most of them were fruit farmers. Due to the landslide, the transportation was also severely affected. Most fruits perished before they could be sent to the market.

When Aurora heard about that, she used the Icy Dragon Punch to break the mountain into half so that the farmers could use it for logistics.

That was five years ago, and people still talked about it.

She had broken the mountain in half with just one punch.

In one of the halls in the Emei Sect's building.

Aurora sat on the Phoenix Chair. She looked about 30 years old, and she wore a purple dress; she looked elegant like a Goddess.

She was also a Level Four Martial Saint.

After a long cultivation period, Aurora had finally achieved her upgrade.

That was the first day after her upgrade, and she looked as cold as she usually did.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stood in front of her.

"Sect Master, we must kill Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said.

She had rushed back to the Emei Mountain when she learned that Aurora had completed her cultivation. Then she told her about all the humiliation that she had suffered at Darryl's hand.

Aurora sat there and said, "Darryl? Was he the one who caused the death of his grandfather, violated his siblings, joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect and humiliated you?"

"Yes, that's him!" Abbess Mother Serendipity

sighed.

She was so angry when she remembered that she had to kneel in front of Darryl and he had patted her hair.

Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lips. "Sect Master, he is a useless piece of sh*t! He also has the Supreme Mystery Scripture with him. The scripture cannot be in the hands of such a useless person."

"Right," Aurora replied calmly. "Let's not talk about him. Tell me what had happened when I was in cultivation."

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded and continued to say, "Sect Master, the most critical development was that the World Universe would most likely enter a battle with the New World..."

...

On the other hand, at the Great West Real Estate's presidential office in Donghai City.

It was six in the morning, and Darryl sat worriedly at his desk; Jade stood obediently beside him.

Darryl called Jade early in the morning when she was still in bed. She could hear that Darryl was very anxious. She rushed to the company; she did not even waste time with makeup. However, she still looked attractive without it.

"Get me a painting artist, and hurry," Darry ordered.

Chapter 647

Darryl had never taken any pictures of Monica.

The only way to find Monica was to get a painter to draw her portrait.

There was no other way!

Jade took her cell phone and started to make some calls.

She was the Windon Group's general manager. She was also very famous in Donghai City. In less than an hour, a painter arrived at her office.

The painter started her drawing based on Darryl's verbal description. After some fine-tuning, the portrait was done.

The portrait looked exactly like Monica.

Darryl immediately left the Great West Real Estate after he had the portrait.

He snapped a picture of the portrait and sent it to the Dixon quadruplets. They would lead the Elysium Gate members to start their search for the Cult Mistress, but Darryl had specifically told them to be low profile. They need to do that discreetly as Monica was the Cult Mistress.

They did not want to alert the Grandmaster Heaven Cult.

Once he had given his instructions, he took the portrait and headed to Donghai City's busiest streets.

He wanted to show the portrait to everyone he met in case they had seen her.

Even though it sounded foolish, it was the most effective way to do it.

The Cult Mistress was a gorgeous woman; anyone who had met her would definitely remember her.

It was autumn, and it had gotten colder. Darryl stood on the street and started to ask everyone he met to show them the portrait.

After a few hours, Darryl had asked countless people; his legs were numb, but he did not get any news about her.

It was late in the evening, and Darryl stood in the middle of the road in despair. He had something to eat in his hand, but he was upset and full of regrets.

He had not eaten or drunk anything the entire day; he did not have any appetite at all.

Donghai City was a large city; it was almost impossible to meet the Cult Mistress.

The Cult Mistress had been living at the Elysian Island; she was new to Donghai City. She had no one to go to, and she was pregnant with his child. He would be devastated if anything were to happen to her.

Darryl panicked. He threw his meal away and continued the search with the portrait in his hand.

The day turned dark, and there were lesser people on the street. Only a few groups of youngsters loitered on the road.

Not far away, a group of youngsters walked by. Some of them smoked, some had tattoos all over their body and colored hair, while some had ear studs. All of them looked cheesy. Darryl had no intention to approach them, but he still went ahead. He showed them the portrait and asked them if they had seen the lady on it.

He held out the portrait as he spoke to them.

He did not have much hope about it, though.

Surprisingly, once they saw the portrait, they looked at each other and burst into laughter.

"Isn't she the new waitress at the Secret Garden?"

All of them laughed.

What?!

They had seen her?!

Darryl was delighted. He asked, "Secret Garden? Where is this place?"

One of the young men with blonde hair replied, "My friend, you have asked the right person. We are regulars at the Secret Garden. It's a new bar near the Millennium Mall. The environment is pretty good."

They looked at the portrait again and continued to say, "The lady in the portrait is the most beautiful waitress there. Her body is so sexy. She became the top waitress in just a few days. Most of the rich and famous would go there and request for her service."

The blonde young man looked at Darryl and said, "Brother, are you looking for her service? You have great taste!"

What?!

Darryl's mind went blank.

Chapter 648

At the Secret Garden Karaoke Bar in Donghai City.

The bar was located on a busy street, and it had just opened not too long ago. It was also Donghai City's largest bar.

At the bar's level three deluxe suite.

The deluxe suite was a few hundred square feet wide. There was a wine counter, a sleeping area, top-notch sound system and most importantly, a small dancing pool.

The bar had a very grand area, and their hourly rate was around 50 thousand bucks. Except for wealthy families, no one could really afford it.

At that moment, the suite was surrounded by dozens of bodyguards dressed in black suits; they looked impressive.

All of them were there to protect one person—Dalton Zander from Dalton Entertainment.

After the incident at Donghai City's Mid-Autumn Festival celebration where Darryl poured urine all over Dalton, he realized the importance of bodyguards. All of his men were highly paid, and

they were all experienced cultivators.

Dalton sat on the sofa, and he had a glass of red wine in his hand; he was there to enjoy himself.

A few ladies sat beside him, and they were all gorgeous women. They were Dalton Entertainment's artists. A few owners from smaller entertainment companies were there too.

Since Platinum Corporation had gone bankrupt, Dalton Entertainment had taken over most of Donghai City's resources. After just a short time, Dalton's entertainment company was well-known in the entertainment industry.

Dalton was very proud of that fact.

At that moment, Dalton had a glass of red wine, and he smiled as he looked at the waitress in front of him.

The waitress had a perfect body and features; she looked very elegant. Dalton was immediately attracted to her.

That woman was Monica!

"What a beauty!" Dalton sipped his wine and started to check out Monica.

Dalton was there because he had heard about that beautiful waitress.

He was very attracted to Monica once he saw her.

She was stunning!

How would there be such a beautiful lady? All his female artists looked so ordinary when compared to her.

Dalton's stare made Monica feel uneasy. However, she had no choice. Her manager, Janette, had instructed her to serve the deluxe suite. She could not reject it as that was her job.

Janette stood beside Dalton and smiled. "President Dalton, if you are happy with her, then I shall let her serve you today."

Janette was very excited. Monica had made so much money for her, and even President Dalton liked her.

Dalton was the entertainment industry's top boss. If he were satisfied with the service, then he would be a regular there.

Then, Janette would earn plenty of commission from his patronage. She was very excited about that prospect.

Chapter 649

Dalton nodded; his eyesight never left Monica's body.

Dalton smiled and asked, "Manager Janette, I heard that this beautiful lady would only serve fruits and sing. Would she make an exception and have a drink with me?"

Janette was stunned, but she smiled and said, "President Dalton, you are a special guest here. Of course, she could make an exception. It is Monica's honor to have a drink with you."

As she spoke, she looked at Monica and asked her to serve Dalton with a drink.

Monica bit her lips and said, "Manager Janette, we have agreed that I will not have to drink with the guests."

On the first day of work, Monica had felt that something was not right. The guest would always look at her as if she was naked. All of their stares made her feel uncomfortable.

Monica wanted to leave the place, but where could she go?

Donghai City was so big, and she had no money

with her. Where would she find Darryl?

Darryl's sister-in-law had recommended the place, so it should not be too bad. On the first day of work, Monica had told Janette that she would never drink with the guests, and Janette had agreed to that. Why would she go back on her words?

Monica had always been up at the pedestal; how could she have drinks with the guests?

Janette laughed and said, "What are you waiting for? Have a drink with President Dalton. You have been working here a few days now. How many guests were upset because you refuse to drink with them? I can forgive you for those incidents, but today, you must drink with President Dalton. Do you understand me?"

Dalton was Janette's gold mine. If she could retain such a guest, she would make a fortune. No matter what, Monica must take that drink with him.

Monica bit her lip; she did not know what to do.

Then, Janette whispered to her, "No matter what, you must accept the drink. Do you know who Mister Dalton is? If you don't drink it, you cannot stay here. Leave, and you will not get your wages."

Then, she pushed Monica toward the guest.

Monica bit her lips. After some struggle, she took

the glass and looked at Dalton. "Thank you for coming here, boss. Cheers!"

Monica took a small sip of the drink.

She was really reluctant to accept the drink, but she had no choice. Otherwise, she would be fired and not receive her wages. She needed the job to live.

Monica only took a sip because she was pregnant.

"Oh, how rude! You must finish the whole glass." Janette said unhappily as she furrowed her brows.

Dalton laughed. "That's fine. It's the first time for our beauty here, so it is understandable."

Dalton tapped the sofa beside him and said to Monica, "Beautiful Lady, come and take a seat. Don't be shy; I am a very friendly person..." Then he laughed.

Monica bit her lips and sat down next to him.

Dalton immediately wrapped his arms around her waist and said, "Beautiful Lady, don't just sit on the sofa, sit here." He smiled and pointed at his lap.

Chapter 650

"Please be respectful."

Monica was furious; she moved Dalton's arm away and maintained a distance between them on the sofa.

"Fine, fine, I will be respectful."

Dalton laughed and then lifted his wine glass for a sip as he stared at Monica.

Dalton waved at Janette.

Janette quickly walked forward and asked, "President Dalton, what can I do for you?"

Dalton laughed and said, "Janette, it is a waste to keep this beautiful lady here as a waitress. I want to purchase her contract and make her an artist with my company!"

Janette hesitated as she smiled. "President Dalton, I am afraid that is not appropriate."

Janette needed Monica to attract more customers to her bar.

Dalton shook his head and took an Amethyst Bank diamond card out of his wallet. "I will give you ten

million bucks, and she leaves with me."

What?!

Ten million bucks!

Janette was stunned. Then she smiled at him. "That's very generous of you, President Dalton. Fine then, I shall give her to you."

Janette was so excited; she had just made a fortune. She wanted to laugh out loud.

Dalton moved closer to Monica and smiled. "Beautiful Lady, with your qualities, I can assure you that you would be very famous in the entertainment industry. Don't worry; I promise to give you all the best resources in my company."

The rest of the female artists there were furious when they heard that.

"President Dalton, that's not fair. What about us?"

"Yes, she is just a waitress; what can she do?"

Dalton said impatiently, "Shut up, all of you!"

None of them could compare to Monica.

Dalton smiled and looked at Monica with concern. "Beautiful Lady, are you excited? Don't worry, I assure you, you will be famous very soon. There is a reality program called the Birth of a Star, and I will

enrol you into it. Why don't we take the conversation to the other bedroom to discuss further?"

Dalton wrapped his arm around Monica's waist.

In his mind, no matter how beautiful a lady was, all of them could be tempted to be a star.

It was most ladies' dream.

He was confident that Monica had only pretended to be pure. She must have felt delighted; that was why he started to take advantage of her.

"You—"

Monica could not stand it anymore. She struggled to remove his arms and shouted, "Please be respectful!"

Wow!

Everyone in the suite was shocked.

Was she crazy?

Chapter 651

How could she speak to President Dalton that way?

"What's wrong with you? How dare you speak to President Dalton like that?" Janette could feel the cold sweat on her back. "Apologize to him immediately."

Dalton laughed and asked Janette to leave.

He approached Monica again and said, "Beautiful Lady, you have a temper, but I like it."

He held onto Monica's hands as he spoke.

"Let go of me!"

Monica was furious. She took the glass of wine on the table and splashed it all over Dalton's face. Then she stood up and got ready to leave the suite.

Bang!

Dalton was furious; he could not hold it in anymore. He kicked the coffee table, and all the glasses dropped onto the floor.

"Sh*t! How dare you!" Dalton was enraged as he waved to the bodyguards. "Tie her up!"

The bodyguards immediately surrounded her and

tied her up with some ropes.

Monica had always been weak; she would never be able to defeat the bodyguards. On top of that, she was pregnant too. Even though she struggled, they could still tie her up easily and threw her onto the sofa.

Dalton looked at her. "You have guts; how dare you splash wine onto my face!"

Dalton turned to the female artists and said, "Come on, welcome your new colleague! Cheers!"

The female artists immediately raised their glasses and walked toward them.

All of them poured the wine on Monica's face.

The wine dripped from Monica's face and onto her hair. However, she still looked very attractive.

Dalton smiled coldly and said, "Are you enjoying this, Beautiful Lady?"

"Stay away from me!" Monica continued to struggle.

Janette was furious, she walked over to Monica and scolded her. "How dare you behave like that? You are only a waitress here."

Monica cried, "Janette, my sister-in-law recommended me here. She said that you would

take care of me. Is this how you care for me?"

Janette laughed. "You call her your sister-in-law? Why had I never heard her say that? When Yumi called me, she told me I could do whatever I want with you, let alone only to drink with the guests."

"You—" Monica bit her lips. "That's not true, not true..."

"How is it not true? Stop with all the tantrum now. You must satisfy all President Dalton's requests today!" Janette said coldly.

"I don't want to work here any more; let me go." Monica started to cry. "Release me. I don't want to work here anymore."

"No!" Janette was so angry, she walked forward and slapped Monica on her face.

Slap!

She gave her a big slap, and it left red marks on Monica's face.

Monica shouted and cried in pain.

"What nonsense! Stop pretending to be pure and innocent!" Janette scolded her loudly. She raised her hand again and slapped Monica a few more times.

Chapter 652

Slap! Slap!

Each slap got harder and harder.

Janette was furious; she pulled Monica's hair and kicked her at the abdomen.

"How dare you act so innocent here!" Janette scolded as she continued to hit Monica.

No one had ever hit Monica before that.

She was also weak as she was pregnant. She felt extreme pain when Janette kicked her abdomen. She was scared and sad, and she continued to cry.

"Enough, don't injure her." Dalton smiled as he asked Janette to stop. He walked closer and smiled at Monica.

"Oh no, your face is all red," Dalton said as he touched her face.

"You—" Monica was furious; she continued to shout, "Don't touch me, go away, leave!"

When Dalton's face inched closer, and his hands were all over her, she felt hopeless. She closed her eyes and continued to cry.

'Darryl, where are you? I have been looking all over for you, and I can't find you. Do you know that someone is bullying me?' Monica thought.

"Sh*t! I will kill you, Dalton!"

Suddenly they heard a loud roar. The next second, a loud bang was heard, and the door was crushed into pieces!

Everyone looked at the doorway.

A man stood at the door, and his eyes were all red. In his hand was the Blood Drinking Sword.

It was none other than Darryl!

"Darryl—" Monica bit her lips as she cried.

'Am I dreaming? He is here; he is here to save me,' Monica thought.

"Who are you? Who let you in here?" Janette furrowed her brows as she looked at Darryl. "Leave now. You cannot be in this suite!"

She saw his cheap clothes and thought that he must be another drunkard.

Janette would never hesitate to kick all drunken men out of her bar.

She was about to chase Darryl away; she walked toward him.

Before she reached where Darryl stood, Janette felt that something was not right.

The man at the door held his fists tightly; he looked fierce.

She felt a shiver run down her spine; she could not even breathe!

Darryl's eyes were red, and his body trembled!

All he saw was the Cult Mistress tied up, and Dalton's dirty hand was on her face!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Each step that Darryl took created a loud sound.

"What—what are you trying to do?" Janette felt scared; she started to walk backward. "The Secret Garden is not a place you want to provoke—"

Before she could finish her sentence, Darryl raised his hand and squeezed her neck as he lifted her!

"All of you must die today."

Then, Darryl raised another hand and slapped Janette's face!

Slap!